

## A WOMAN'S WORTH

### INTRODUCTION AND INSERT 1\*

Hi my name is Amanda Tshetlo I am 40 years old and have been married for 15 years my husband's name is Simon Tshetlo and the first few years of our marriage has been nice and easy but lately we have fallen apart we have been distant it seems like we have fallen out of love. Yes it is easy to fall out of love, my husband and I have officially reached that stage.

We went to a point of having sex just to produce and not because of the fun of it but now there is no having sex we are just two strangers living in the same house. We are just shadows of who we were, we no longer make each other laugh. I am pretty sure he even forgot what makes me happy or how I smile, I used to cry everyday but now I am slowly running out of tears.

I am used to the fact that when he is excessively drunk he will take out his frustrations on me verbally and sometime physically but on rare occasions like two weeks back. I still have the scars to show it but it is not that bad, I still have hope my marriage will be saved I have hope I will find the happiness I deserve. I will find it I know I will. Let me start years later where we are miles apart from each other

My alarm went off and it is time to get up, I rolled out of bed and looked at my other side of the bed Simon was still asleep, I shook my head because he decided to go on a phuzo Thursday and I am pretty sure he expects me to wake him up but I really don't have the time for him anymore the sight of him alone pisses me off. I went into the bathroom and took the longest shower ever I deserve it more than him, my phone went off and it was many of the countless emails I receive at work, yes I am a lab manager at a food company. I went downstairs and made food for myself.

Him: why didn't you wake me up?

I looked at him and continued eating

Me: good morning to you too

I said this sarcastically

Him: mxm!

Me: oh and don't forget today our families are coming

Him: today is Friday I have plans. By the way who called them?

Me: you always have plans just make time for your family

Him: are you telling me what to do?

I kept quiet and continued eating

Him: Sindy is coming today

Me: okay

Sindy is his personal assistant and sometimes I think they are more than that but I was afraid of confronting him I was not ready for the outcomes I still want to believe that he loves me and won't cheat on me because I am faithful

Me: Mpho is coming today

Him: what time?

Me: I don't know

Him: mxm

Mpho was our oldest son whom we both love I wish he was more excited about him than that Sindy. He walked out and I tidied up after me, I took my car keys and backed out of the house. Let me say I was running away because I finished the hot water. He came out running in his towel screaming my name on the drive through, I didn't hear what he said because I put my music on loud and I wore my shades looking at him. I sounded my bell as I drove off

Me: bye

My nextdoor neighbour was laughing at the whole scene as I waved at her. I arrived at work and rushed to my office just to finish up today's work. My phone went off and it was my best friend Anele calling

Me: babes

Her: hello love are we doing lunch today?

I checked my time

Me: I don't see why not

Her: okay meet me in 10

I packed up my things and the door opened I looked up and Lucky who just joined the company got in. he was previously a Dj but after he obtained a food tech degree and he is very good looking

Me: can I help you?

Him: yes I just wanted to ask you about my job I want to learn a more from you

Me: okay, just meet up after lunch and I will explain everything to you

He nodded and walked out, I rushed out of the factory and met up with my friend. We shared a hug and sat opposite each other

Her: so what is happening?

Me: friend today my family and the in-laws are coming

Her: really, my friend what are you going to discuss? How your husband is supposedly cheating? How he never sleeps with you what actually?

Me: we are trying to save my marriage

Her: that marriage died a long time ago

I looked at her and her word hit me in the heart

Her: even if you can look at me like that really I couldn't care less about your dead marriage my friend you need someone new in your life

Me: I am giving us a year and if he doesn't change than I am giving up

Her: you said that last year

Me: I don't what to be the one who gave up easily

Our order came and we ate

Her: so anything new either than your so called husband

Me: well there is a new guy at the office and trust me when I say he is hot

Her: whoo tsala tell me more

Me: well I am going to be training him

She produced a devilish smile

Me: and he is younger than me

Her: so?

Me: haai sies man I am a married woman

Her: that shouldn't stop you from living my friend let this dog sweat for you once and let him cry for you

I smiled I really can't do this to him or can I just once? I told her about what happened this morning and we couldn't stop laughing at my husband, man it felt good

We wrapped up lunch and I walked back to the office, I called Lucky to my office and began explaining everything to him, the way he was so serious he was even taking notes while I explain he won't just do sample taking only but he will be doing much more than that.

I assigned him to the chemistry lab. He really seemed determined to prove himself and I loved that. I enjoyed spending time with him finally I could laugh like how I used to. After work I drove straight home and found my in laws already there, I walked in and greeted them my mother in law stood up and walked towards me

Her: so is this how we are greeted? the people not living in this house arrive way before the owners arrive?

Me: I am sorry I was at work and I thought Simon was working here because he said Sindy was coming

Her: who is Sindy?

Me: someone we should definitely be discussing

My son came towards me and we shared a hug, he was sixteen and I miss him but we agreed that boarding school was better because we fought a lot

Me: you didn't have to come

Him: I am not young mom I know what is happening okay

I nodded and I cooked for everyone. My parents came and we all sat and waited for my so called husband he decided not to come and we all slept with a heavy heart. I woke up in the morning and he was sleeping next to me smelling like a shabeen, I shook him up and he just looked at me blankly

Me: couldn't you at least be here for your parents and my parents are here as well

Him: so?

Me; they are here to see us

Him: I didn't call them

He dragged the blankets to his head

Me: they are here to help us fix our situation

Him: is there anything that needs fixing?

He sat up when he said this and I backed up a little

Him: the only fixing we need is your attitude towards me I am your husband. We are happy I am happy are you not happy?

I looked at him as he said that, I don't know what happiness he is talking about

Him: now tell them to get the FUCK OUT OF MY HOUSE! Sindy needs to come over we have business to handle and the hotel bed is not comfortable

My heart sank as he said that

Me: is Sindy more important than us?

He glared at me and I stood to go freshen up, I walked downstairs and made breakfast for everyone including him. My father in law came down and he joined me

Him: I heard the two of you fighting

Me: it happens everyday

Him: I will have to talk to him man to man

I nodded and handed him his plate

Me: I don't think we will fixable

Him: please don't say that you are perfect for him he needs you in his life

Me: no he has Sindy

Him: so you are going to give up because of Sindy?

Me: he doesn't want to be married to me

Him: did he tell you that?

I looked at him processing everything we are talking about and I can't believe he is taking his side

Me: well I can't keep suffering in a name of saving my marriage I am giving him a year and that is it

His mother came in

Her: so you are giving up just like that

My parents came in as well

My mother: what does she have to do to save a failing marriage?

Her: she needs to show him who he is married to

My mother: woo shame my child is not an experiment for this marriage to work, baby if you feel it is too much you can go

Her: give up while you at it go

I just walked out and walked to our bedroom and he was still sleeping and I opened the windows and tidied up after him and looked at him, how could he allow us to get here? What changed between us? What went wrong in this relationship? We used to be tight we used to be happy. I miss him I feel like he is a stranger in my husband's body. I feel like he was changed overnight like he died that night and an alien took over. Will we ever find ourselves back to each other or should I just move on?

## CHAPTER 2\*

He woke up while I was still staring at him questioning our marriage he looked at me with disgust like I was some type of disease

Him: what are you looking at?

Me: nothing is there anything I should be looking at

Him: at least my body is still good to look at

He stood up and went to take a shower, what he said hurt me deeply I wish he could find me sexy again I wish we could... argh what is the point of wishing for the past if someone doesn't want to go back to the past?

I opened the windows and picked up his dirty clothes sorting them out to make it easy for Me on laundry day. He came out and mumbled something like this

Him: MXM she can't even make the bed

He looked for his clothes while I sat on the edge of the bed

Him: should I wear this blue tie or the red one

I smiled to myself he must be joking thinking I am going to help him out who the hell does he think he is

Him: well?

He really was testing me and one day I am going to explode on him

Me: why don't you facetime Sindy and ask her

Him: for once in your life you made sense

He took his phone and called Sindy in front of me I seriously can't be bothered anymore. She helped him pick out an outfit I laughed silently because it wasn't really his style but yet again I don't know this man standing in front of me who am I to judge him

Him: see something Sindy is better doing than you. You are fat and lazy

He walked out after he said this and I looked in the mirror I won't let his words hurt me any more, he shouted from the kitchen that he wanted his food and I just smiled and fixed the bed making sure to take my time in the process

Him: MaTshetlo!

He shouted for a while

Him: ma I am not calling you but Amanda

I walked out and decided to join the family in the kitchen I made myself coffee and I drank it looking at him

Him: today you just want to see me mad don't you

Me: why say so?

Him: my breakfast

Me: what about it

Him: where is it I am hungry

Me: why don't you facetime Sindy maybe she will make it since she can do things better than me

He looked at Me while I tried to remain calm and drank my coffee. Our son came and I gave him a hug

Mpho: ma I am hungry

I took Simon's plate and gave it to Him

Me: here son I made food for your father and he told me he is full so please do enjoy

He looked at Me shaking his head my mother poked me from the back

Her: baby this is not done

Me: no what mama I think it's time all of you go home

Her: but we haven't talked to you yet

Me: there is nothing to talk about really I mean we are happy. I am happy he is happy so what more do we need? Are you not happy Simon

He stared at me

Me: since I took my precious time to call you I think it is best to be the one to ask you all to leave

Mother in law: what is happening

Me: our marriage is fine there is nothing to save so can you please leave us before Cindy gets tired of the hotel bed

Everyone stared at me like I was crazy

Me: his words not mine. And please do remember Cindy's comfort comes first before the whole family so me and my son are going out shopping when I come back i don't want to find either one of you. Your services have been rendered useless

I looked at my son who was smiling like an idiot

Me: ready to go?

Mpho: question is am I getting the xbox

Me: since your father is paying why not unless he changed his pin and blocked us like how he has changed now

He stuttered a little

Me: it's okay son I can afford it we don't need his money

I took out his credit card from my purse and threw it at his face

Me: I hope Cindy enjoys your money more than your son

Him: don't try to poison my son

Me: you are doing a good job by yourself

After everyone finished eating except for Simon of course I washed the dishes and tidied up the kitchen really need the distraction of thinking about my life. Our parents walked in with their luggages

Me: have a safe trip everyone

Simon just looked on while Mpho and I walked out we got in my car and drove off

Jim: way the go mom

I smiled when he said this

Him: when we done can you drop me off the res

Me: you don't want to live with me



Him: with your husband no thank you mom you deserve much more than this

Me: but baby I am old

Him: are you kidding me 40 is the new 20 it's high time you should start changing and become yourself

Me: I am myself

Him: you are the shadow of yourself mom

We got to the mall and he picked up a lot of designer clothes so expensive I knew I was going to be in debts for this after hitting more than 7 shops we went to a restaurant and ordered food having a light conversation. On my way to the car Mpho hurried before me to the car and started packing some guy pulled me to the side

Him: are you Simon's wife

Me: and who are you

Him: tell him G said hi

Me: what?

He walked away and I continue to my car we drove off and I dropped my son at his school he kissed me goodbye and left. I started driving home slowly stalling the time to get there I mean what was I rushing go to? There is nothing keeping happy there it is just plain torture. To think when we first met at varsity he was a junior lecture and I was a third year student. He used to buy me flowers everyday call me at odd hours of the day. We used to go on dates every night and made love like our lives depended on it. We even have matching tattoos on our thighs. Where did the love die why did it even die. I miss his touch I miss his soft lips on mine the way he used to look at me. The way he used to caress me

Person: stupid bitch!

It was the only thing that brought me back to life and I realised that I miss the red light and nearly caused an accident. My heart was beating fast because I nearly died for someone who was obsessing over Sindy. I parked my car and got out the other driver came towards me shout and screaming and I just broke down hearing his words

Lucky: hey can't you see she is already distressed

He looked at Me and pulled me in for a hug

Him: are you okay

I just looked at him and continued to cry the other driver tried to talk

Him: say one more word I dare you

The drive backed up and left us there, after what seemed an eternity I pulled out from his embrace

Me: how did you get here?

He smiled

Him: I live here

He pointed at a beautiful corner house I couldn't stop staring at it for someone earning his pay

Him: relax my cousin fixed it for me, come in you could use a break

Me: no thank you i need to go home

Him: you look like a nervous wreck

Me: jeez thanks

He laughed

Him: since I can't convince you to come in promise me you will call me when you get home

I nodded and got in my car

Him: and please boss lady if you need anything at all or someone to talk to I am here for you

Me: thank you but I will be fine

Him: just friends I know you are married

Me: agreed

I drove off hooting my bell for goodbye I drove fast just to reach home, I opened the door and the house was empty

Me: Simon!

I called out a couple of times and he didn't answer. I took out my phone and called Lucky he answered after two rings and we had a lengthy conversation. I even laughed a couple of time. After I hung up I walked to my bedroom and found a thong on the floor and everything was confirmed he and Sindy were more than just business partners and it hurt. I tried to be strong but my emotions wouldn't allow it

### CHAPTER 3\*

I waited for him all night and I slept with a heavy heart and threw the thong across the floor. I understand bring someone into my house but our bedroom the level of disrespect. How can he throw 15 years of marriage 15 of my life wasted just like that. I woke up in the morning and I was still alone in our house I decided to take a shower and wore my dress I need to go to church I need the divine intervention from the high lord as I back out my neighbour Lizzy screamed out my name I got out and walked to her. We used to be best friends discussing our marriages and sharing stories but lately going to her is the constant reminder of my failed marriage we only greet each other or laugh at each other like on Friday with the hot water incident

Her: hey neighbour

I forced a smile

Me: hey Lizzy

Her: my friends it has been a while since we hung out

Me: I know

Her: I know things are not good between you two and I really want to be there for you like you were when my husband nearly left me

Me: I am not shutting you out but

She started crying

Her: you are more than a sister to me and it hurts seeing you go through this alone

Me: please stop crying

Her: I want to be there for you

Me: okay okay after church we can go for lunch

Her: can I come to church with you

I breathed out loudly

Me: sure why not

She was excited

Me: I am giving you ten minutes

Her: I have already bathed I just need to wear my dress

I shook my head looking at her damn Anele is most def going to kill me for being late. I waited and waited until I hooted for her she came out wearing a long dress

Me: what took you so long

Her: Sibonelo

That's her troublesome husband. We drove to church and when we entered everyone turned to look at us even the sermon paused I felt judged like everyone knows my marriage problem the service went on

Pastor: Mrs Tshetlo can you please come to us and give blessings on marriage

I smiled because I asked the pastor to give me 5 min to discuss marriage every sunday with the youth some of the people were not happy with this arrangements but my pastor thought it was a good idea now I feel like it's a joke a long cruel joke a never ending nightmare

I got up and walked to the alter

Me: please forgive me but today I have not prepared anything for you all I can share with you is to please not enter marriage with false expectations because when you fall out of love things will not be easy there will be drama tears and heartache life is really unpredictable

Everyone was surprised at my sudden change

Me: thank you for your time

I step down and Anele signals for me to join her, I went to her and she opened her arms we shared a hug

Her: it's okay baby

She whispered in my ear and we smiled at each other. After final prayer we left and I went outside with Anele and found Lizzy standing by the car door

Me: how long have you been standing here

Her: when you left me and joined her

Me: come on babes you know Anele won't bite you

Anele: yeah I am the sweet friend

We both looked at her and laughed

Anele: come on ladies let's get lunch

Me: I have to make lunch for...

Anele: let Sindy do it

We shared a look and laughed we drove to the restaurant and we went to the buffet and we were told it was a special R145 and we eat all day. We sat and dished up on starters ordering a glass of wine

Anele: you forgot to tell me about the family meeting

Me: it didn't happen

Anele: why

Me: he didn't want the meeting

Anela: that son of a bitch

Me: I can swear all I want he is just a stubborn person

Anele: don't you dare defend him

Me: and I found a thong in our bedroom

She choked on her drink and clapped once

Anele: ah tsala why are you still there

Me: I don't know but it's hard breaking a marriage vow 15 years being together and all of a sudden everything is different

Anele: you have pride my friend you deserve happiness don't cut yourself short

Lizzy out of the blue started releasing tears

Me: and then what's wrong?

Her: Sibonelo made someone pregnant and I have been dying to tell you but I couldn't

Me: you lie

Anele: you ladies are disappointments shuu no. You see me I kick a man out when he starts doing shit

Me: is that what happened to Morena

Anele: I kicked him out so fast friend you won't believe it. I found him with a girl in his bedroom and I got them out in the streets I beat the shit out of him. I am not stupid.

We shared a laugh

Anele: hey amadoda you need to sort them out yourself. Wena you have been spoiling him with these family meetings

Me: but

Anele: I don't want to hear it get out of that marriage. You were busy telling hey I am married blah blah blah. Now it's time to teach people about divorce

My heart sank as she said these words

Anele: sitting here feeling sorry for yourselves is not going to work these men are taking you for granted

Her: I believe we are going to make it

Anele: this one is also believing

She pointed at Me

Anele: where is that believing leading her now? Nowhere

We looked at her

Anele: when was the last time you two had sex

We looked down

Anele: mina at least I know when I get out of here I am going to have sex look at that guy

I looked behind and a good looking brother was staring at us

Anele: he wants some of this

I laughed

Anele: and wena there is a Lucky in your life

My mouth popped wide up

Me: he is younger than

Anele: the younger the better

Me: I am still married

Anele: he is fucking someone right now

The thought of it made me angry

Me: just because he is doing it doesn't mean I have to do it

Anele: you need divine intervention right

Me: yeah

Anele: well God does not give by hand he helps those who help themselves

Me: so I should be whoring because of that

Anele: whatever you call it do it

Her: you are such a bad person

Anele: yeah that is why you are going to be a stepmother

Me: ah friend

Anele: this is not 1950s where you live rules wake up these young ones are dangerous

We spent the whole afternoon there talking nonsense and flirting with men for the fun of it. Lizzy was too uptight to flirt. After a good afternoon with great company I drove Lizzy and I home while Anele used her car. Lizzy got off after I parked we shared a hug and she hurried home. I unlocked the doors and there was no one or so I thought I texted Lucky a bit, made myself something you drink before going to my bedroom as I was approaching the door my heart started beating fast I thought my ears were playing with me

Sindy: ah yes ah ah harder yes

I stopped on my tracks as I listened to her screaming in ecstasy that I should be getting from my husband. I got the courage and walked to the door when I got nearer I hear him grunting it disgusted me. I felt my whole world collapsing in just a matter of seconds. I opened the door and screamed

Me: SIMON TSHETLO!

Him: get out and closed the door!

He didn't even look at me he was busy humping her doggy style their back facing the door I was standing. I closed the door and rushed downstairs calling Anele I explained everything to her and she came after a few minutes. She found me sitting on the couch crying as I cuddled myself I have never felt so disrespected and humiliated in my entire life

Her: this time he has gone to far

We both marched to the bedroom and she kicked the door down packing my clothes

Him: leave her clothes alone

Sindy: baby

Him: Sindy shut up! Wena leave my wife's things

Her: really you have a wife ha. Don't make me angry Simon I just had enough of your shit. You and Sindy deserve each other as for my friend your wife she will be living with me

She pulled me and dragged me out and we drove to her house with me crying the whole way. I can't take this anymore

## CHAPTER 4\*

I sat up from the bed and kept thinking of the recent events that occurred in my life how quickly life has changed for me. How Simon has changed he went from a loving husband to a man I used to love. My mind decided to go back to the day we got married how happy he was looking into my eyes saying those beautiful vows to me. He had written his own vows and made a promise to my parents that he will love me till death do us apart. But now there is Cindy I guess she is the death he was talking about

My phone rang and I looked at it, my boss was calling me none stop. I saw Lucky name appearing as well and I just looked at it. Anele got in and cuddled me from the back

Her: babe it has been two days come on

Me: how do you give up on someone you love

Her: I think it's safe to say you love the two of you more than him. He doesn't deserve these tears at all

Me: I done

Her: yes baby

Me: these two days I was mourning this love lost. What is left between us is memories

Her: I hope you don't blame yourself in all of this

Me: no I don't. I gave him two beautiful children although Angela drowned I still gave him kids what more does he want?

Her: I don't know but it is his loss either way

Me: thank you friend for being here for me

She tightened the hug

Her: now we need to do damage control

Me: like

Her: well we are going to my doctor friend

Me: fuck buddy

Her: don't judge

We laughed

Her: we are calling my lawyer friend

Me: okay



Her: the doctor is for the fake sick leave. And lawyer for divorce

Me: I am really doing this

Her: are you ready

Me: yes come to think of it our love has been dead for a long time

Her: and what he did on Sunday that was bitch

Me: I need to call both our parents and tell them it's over there is no love anymore just tolerance

Her: I love this new you

Me: let's go bath

We stood up and went to shower together she left first and I just sat there and thought of the time we used to shower together telling each other jokes. Teasing one another and end up making love whenever my leg was above his the tattoos would compliment each other. As I said just memories between us. I got up and out to the bedroom and put some lotion and wore my black dress.

We drove to the doctor and he forged the sickness we left and went to the lawyers and they explained everything to me I told them I was married in community of property and they told me they are going to divide our assets equally between us. They drew up the papers and told me they will deliver it to him. I thanked the guy and he escorted us out

Her: how do you feel?

Me: I am fine thank you for being with Me

Her: let's go celebrate

Me: no I still have time to go to work

Her: are you kidding me it's 10am

Me: I will come home at six

Her: babe

Me: relax

I dropped her home and drove straight to work and handed in my doctor's note as I was about to walk in my plant manager came to me

Me: Mr Pillay how are you Sir

Him: where the hell where you?!

Me: I was sick close to death I sorry what happened

Him: we had to dump 700 000 litres of milk

My eyes popped out

Me: what happened

Him: I should be asking you that since you are the lap manager and is this the time to get to work

Me: I could have stayed home

Him: we lost millions fix it. And the CEO is coming tomorrow be here

Me: yes boss

I got in my office and closed the door the picture of us together was looking at me mocking me. I took it and threw it across the wall and bowed my head on the table. Damn him for doing this to me, he is ruining my life in everything. He is a piece of Shit I hate him.

The door opened and Lucky got in

Him: have i have been calling you since morning there has been a red band on the milk the butter fat was too much and they forgot to clean the mixing tank properly so there were some chemicals

He paused and I looked up

Me: thanks for giving me so much info you did all the investigations I am proud of you

Him: yeah I had to save your ass so you owe me

I faked a smile

Him: I don't know if this is appropriate but what's wrong

I wanted to answer him but the lump on my throat was stopping me from talk. He walked over to Me and I just collapsed in his arms crying

Him: hey it is okay please calm down

Me: it's over

Him: what is?

Me: marriage is over for good

I just sobbed some more

Me: I found him having sex in my house on my bed he didn't even say sorry he didn't even stop having sex with her after I caught them he chased me his wife out of the bedroom while he was humping her. I feel stupid. I feel useless maybe I don't deserve happiness

Him: shh please stop crying okay

Me: I have given Him 15 years

Him: it doesn't matter you don't deserve him. You never deserved him you are better than him

I smiled through the tears

Him: now wipe those tear actually

He wiped them for me

Him: feeling better?

I shook my head

Him: okay

He scooped me up

Me: what are you doing

Him: pretend like you fainted

Me: what

Him: just do it you will see

I played along and he walked out of the office hurrying like my life is in danger

Him: do you know where she parked I need to get her to the hospital

Person: is she okay?

Him: no she is just enjoying being in my arms of course she is not okay so please just move and show me her car

I wanted to laugh so badly but I remembered I have "fainted". When we got to the car he put me in the front passenger seat and told the other person he is fine he got it. He drove out of parking half after we left the factory he told me to open my eyes we looked at each other and just laughed

Me: you are so stupid

Him: well my stupidity got you out of work. Let's get something to eat

We went out and had a light conversation sharing jokes and we laughed man I felt relaxed around him

Him: it's good to see you laugh you deserve it more than tears

My phone went off and it was my boss I handed my phone to Lucky and he continued lying about my health. After a great day I dropped him at his home and drove to Anele's place. I found her cooking and kissed her cheek. I sat down telling her about today and she was full of smiles telling me she was proud trust Anele to say such. Anyway someone knocked on her door and she opened up screaming hell no. I got up to see who it was and Simon was staring at me

Him: pack you shit we going home

Her: this is her new home

Him: Amanda I don't want to repeat myself

Her: get out of my house phuma

She pointed at the door I heard a slap landing on her face

Me: don't you ever hit my friend ever again do you

Him: piggy get in the car now and stop oinky you are making a noise

Anele returned the slap with the back of her hand and I punch me how the hell could he call me piggy. He went on his car while Anele and I laughed at Him. Our laughter was cut short when he returned with a bat and hit her with it and she collapsed on the floor

Him: get in the car we going

I kept shaking her to wake up and he dragged me by my hair

Him: we are married and Sindy is my girlfriend you just have to accept it

He threw me in the car and childlocked it I could get out and he drove home with me while I kept praying in my head hoping that someone comes to save ME

## CHAPTER 5\*

He parked the car inside the garage and finally opened the door for me I tried to run out but he stopped me and dragged me inside kicking and screamed. When we got in he locked the doors and looked at Me calmly

Me: WHAT DO YOU WANT FROM ME?

Him: are we not married

Me: I AM NOT THE ONE CHEATING HUMPING PEOPLE LIKE A DOG ON HEAT PLEASE JUST LET ME GO!

Him: no we are still married so make yourself useful and cook

Is he losing his mind after everything I have been through because of him

Me: you got to be joking I need to check on my friend better yet let me call the cops

As i was about to leave calling Anele he took my phone and smashed it against the wall causing me to ask

ME: ARE YOU CRAZY?!

Him: I said cook for us

I sarcastically laughed at him this has to be some sick joke I can't deal with it

Me: cook your own damn food

With that said I walked to the door preparing to leave when he pulled me back with my hair

Him: repeatthat

Me: I said cook you own damn...

I didn't finish that before a heard a jaw breaking slap across my face

Me: you are hurting me

He smashed me against the wall when I tried to fight back causing me to lose my balance. He kicked me twice a hit me once with his fist on my face

Him: see what you made me do because you lost respect for me lately. I feel weak as a man and Sindy makes me feel more like a man

Me: than go be with her allow me to set you free

I was crying as i said this because the pain was unbearable

Him: together for better or for worse

Me: we don't fit well together

Him: what do you want from me

Me: for you to sign the divorce papers when you get them and leave me alone our marriage is over for good

Him: don't say that woman

Me: what is left here tell me? We don't respect each other, there is no love. We are just strangers Simon. When was the last we went out together? When was the last time we made each other happy. When was the last time we touched each other and made love? You don't listen to me its over Simon

Him: so it's the sex you have been missing?

Me: in my whole speech all you picked up is the sex part? Seriously this is why we should just drop everything

He came to me and picked me up dragging me to the bedroom

Me: what are you doing?

He didn't answer me

Me: please stop!

He threw me on the bed and locked the bedroom door

Him: tonight you are going to do your wifey duties

Me: stop please just stop I don't want to catch whatever disease you might have gotten from your whore Cindy

I felt another slap across my cheek

Him: don't you ever call her that again now strip naked

Me: No

Him: fine

He took off his clothes and yanked my panties off while I screaming for help. Who is this man? Why did he change so much? Why is he causing me so much pain? Why do I always have to cry because of him?

3 minutes after he was done he stood up and wiped himself clean causing me to feel cheap and used by my husband.

Him: tomorrow my parents are having a ceremony for my sister I need you to fix yourself and tell your boss you are sick. I can't allow you to not come people are going to ask questions.

He laughed

Him: imagine Simon divorced, this wife is testing me

I just sat there silently looking at him with tears coming out who is this man?

Him: stop crying tomorrow you will feel like yourself again

He tried to touch me and I moved away from him

Him: mxm

I don't know how i slept but the following morning I got up and rushed to the bathroom looking at the scars he gave me. I took a long shower thinking of the events of last night, I sat at the corner of the shower as the water reached me, I just cried trying to scrub him off me. He didn't even feel any pain when he did the things he did he just didn't care at all. To him this is just a sick joke.

I got out after a while and wrapped a towel around me, I walked into the bedroom and he was still sleeping I took my things and went back to the bathroom. I applied lotion, body spray, deodorant and perfume. After getting dressed I applied make-up lots of it and walked out took his car keys since my car is at Anele's. I opened the door and he changed the lock codes for the garage door so I could get out my heart became heavy. I walked back and waited for him to wake up. He did and casually strolled through the kitchen

Him: what's for breakfast?

I shrug my shoulder

Me: can you give me the lock codes I need to leave

Him: where to?

Me: I need to go to work

Him: I told you to take a leave

Me: Simon please open the door for me

Him: after breakfast

Me: I am getting late for work and how can I contact my boss when I left one phone at Anele's and you broke the other

Him: I said after breakfast

Me: i will be fired by than

Him: sounds even better

I looked at him with intense anger on my face

Him: what are going to do? That's right nothing. I can't believe you want to throw away 15 years of marriage see this as a favour babe nobody is going to love your fat ugly ass you are stuck with me. Actually you should be giving me credit for staying so long

His words hurt me badly

Him: that is why I have Sindy to fill this void in my heart look at you.

He pointed at me up and down

Him: you belong here with me

Me: can I just go to work please

Him: well since you are useless and won't cook

He walked in the garage and opened for me

Him: be back before 3 or I will personally fetch you from work

I got in the car and drove out. Lizzy waved at me and I hooted for her. I drove to Anele's house first and the neighbours told me she is at the hospital. I found my phone and called her she didn't pick up. I called her mother still no answer. I drove straight to work and avoided everyone's eyes. The whole day I locked myself in the office attending to meetings only. At 3 I prepared to leave when I heard a knock on my door

Me: what do you want

Him: I thought I might pop in to see you since you locked yourself all day

Me: thanks now you can go

I was looking down not facing him. I didn't want Lucky to feel sorry for me. Within a few seconds I felt hands on my chin and he lifted my face up

Him: who did this?

Me: it doesn't matter I need to leave

Him: it does matter you look awful

His word reminder me of those I heard from Simon and I closed my eyes processing what he said

Him: not awful in a bad way but awful as in you are badly hurt



Me: I need to go Lucky please, Simon might come in here

Him: your husband did this

I nodded

Him: and you allowed him

Me: he overpowered me and now he wants me to go to a family function with him. He hit my friend badly I don't even know if she is alive or not

Him: leave your car and come with me

I took my things and walked to his car. I kept looking around hoping Simon was not anywhere near the factory, I lowered his car seat until we were at a safe distance and sat properly. We got inside his house and he put some ice on my face

Him: is it painful

I nodded

Me: I never thought he was this crazy

Him: calm down relax you are safe here

He made me watch movies just to forget about Simon he even made popcorns and wine. I called Anele told her everything even the fact that I was raped Lucky tightened his jaw above my head while I continued talking to Anele. We ordered pizza for dinner before he showed me the guest bedroom I would be sleeping in. I got scared that Simon might find me here and asked him to sleep next to Me like Anele always does when I am afraid. I texted my mother everything I didn't want to hear her cry for her daughter. Lucky wrapped his arms around me and I felt safe as I drifted to sleep

\*CHAPTER 6\*

My ringtone woke us in time and my mother was the one calling me none stop I really didn't want to answer her call but I had no choice

Me: mom

Her: ha.uh Amanda where are you?

Me: what you on about

Her: I am at your house and it is a house to let

Me: what are you doing there?

Her: I came to sort out that piece of shit once and for all

Me: leave it ma

Her: I am calling the cops

Me: don't you will be wasting your time

Her: why will be wasting my time when my daughter is hurting because of a bastard

Me: Ma most people in the police station are his friends so he will be out in a day or so

Her: I don't like this at all

Me: I don't like it either mom but I don't want you to waste your time

Her: anyway I went Anele and she is being discharged today

Me: yeah she told me and I told her I will see her soon

Her: Simon has to pay for this he doesn't know me

Me: mom please

Her: mxm where are you

Me: at a friends house

I looked over my shoulder and Lucky had this amused look on his face

Her: do I know this friend is he a good guy

Me: mom who said anything about him being a guy?

She chuckled through the phone

Her: I hope you know what you are doing

Me: there is nothing that I am doing wena shouldn't you be with your husband

Her: I didn't want him to know his daughter is a punching bag

I understood well why my mother didn't tell my father he has a heart condition which can turn fatal if he cannot manage his stress and bp

Me: okay I will see you later both you and dad now go home

Her: remember I love you

Me: me too mom bye

After she hung up I looked at Lucky

Him: good morning friend

I smiled at him

Me: morning

Him: slept well

I nodded

Me: thanks

Him: no problem we need to get ready for work

Me: you know we did not think this through

Him: what?

Me: I don't have clothes or toothbrush or deodorant at least

He chuckled

Him: come we can share some things

I went to shower alone and used his towel to wipe myself clean. As well as his lotion, body spray and cologne and he gave me a clean toothbrush. I went through his clothes and took out his suit and the pants were like skinny jeans I loved it, since my husband keeps telling me I am fat I thought I wouldn't fit but here i am in a another man' s suit. He came in wearing a huge smile

Him: well sir should we go

I looked at him and laughed

Me: as long I am driving sweet thing

I deepened my voice and we fought for the car keys and he won. He drove us to work and I went in first leaving him in the car while Wolf whistled. I opened my office door after

talking to my boss I was looking at my phone the whole time talking to Lucky. I locked the door

Him: you don't sleep home and you came to work wearing a man's suit and smell like him

I quickly looked up and our eyes met, I tried running for the door and he was fast he pinned me to the door and the handle was hurting my boob. He turned me around and looked at Me

Him: what is that on our finger

He pointed at my ring

Him: what is it?

Me: a ring

Him: and what does it represent

Me: a marriage symbol but for us a dead marriage symbol

He was so close to me I could smell he was drinking

Him: where were you last night

We looked at each other

Him: ANSWER ME!

Me: I don't want to answer you

He banged the wall next to my ear

Him: when I say 3 o'clock home I mean just that you will come home then. Do you know how embarrassed I was when you didn't pitch yesterday at the family function?

I shook my head not like I care

Him: today you will come home do hear me

I moved from him and sat on my chair looking at him

Me: I don't want to. I don't care about you, call sweet Sindy she deserves time with you

Him: don't tell me about Sindy I want you home and that is final

He walked out of my office and I buried myself in work avoiding everyone and everything. I even did my boss's work that's how deep it was. I checked the time it was 7pm and I didn't even have lunch. The door opened and Lucky came in carry a paper bag with take-away

Me: who said I am hungry

Him: your stomach communicated with me through abaphansi

Me: strong ancestors you have there

Him: tokhoza mama

Me: di ya vuma makhosi

He helped me send out some emails and drafting points for tomorrow's meeting with my department after a long day we sat on the floor eating out cold burgers blaming each for all of this

Me: Simon is going to be angry for coming home late

Him: is he going to hit my beautiful face

He brushed my face

Me: I don't know, he was here early in the morning and he looked rather pissed off

Him: we really need to give him a reason to be pissed off

Me: which is?

Him: we will figure it out

We continued eating in complete silence. When we finished we wiped our mouths and we sat on the couch

Me: I am so tired

He looked at Me smiling

Him: of course you are I mean handling work stress and relationship stress you are bound to have a heart attack you deserve a break from all this

Me: I guess it is a part of life

He lift my chin towards him and he looked directly into my eyes

Him: it's not, don't sell yourself short

Dammit I couldn't stop looking at him something about Him drew me and I wanted to break this connection I am still pretty much married to Simon. I have to make this stop. What the..

His lips where already on my lips I slowly responded to the kiss. I closed my eyes and for a moment just this moment it felt right. Like it was meant to be how it should be, why should I care about someone who disrespected me like this. I deserve better too don't I

I opened my eyes when he stopped kissing me, I didn't even noticed he stopped a minute ago

Him: you liked that?

I looked away and I could feel my cheeks burning until I turned to face him again and our lips met once more, he tore his blazer off me and up buttoned the shirt and pants and they both were on the floor.

Him: are you wearing my boxers?

I smiled taking his clothes off

Me: there was nothing for me to wear

Him: I didn't know I was inside you all day

Me: wow...

He cut me off me off with a kiss and unfastened my bra. He gently laid me down on the couch and took out a condom from his pants holding it in his fingers we took off the boxers and we were both naked. I remember him tearing the condom off with his teeth whether he put it on or not I don't remember. He opened my legs wide and inserted himself in me I let out a soft moan and he continued going in and out our bodies moving as one. I felt him Cum inside before we changed positions. By the time we were done my office was a mess. He helped me get dressed and we drove to my so called house

Me: thank you

Him: we not done

Me: what?

He asked me to walk to his side which I did still feeling dumbstruck. He opened the door and pulled me in. Taking the pants off and the boxers

Him: I am keeping these

He made me sit on top of Him while he unzipped his pants and I felt little Lucky going in again

Him: are you good or should I go down

We tried many positions but we failed miserable laughing the whole time until finally we found a comfortable position and I humped up and down on him rolling my eyes back we were both sweating and moaning the smell of sex filled the whole car, until finally we reach climax together and as i rolled back i accidental set the hooter off and we both laughed when we saw the lights come on. I kissed him good bye and fixed myself. I

walked in the house and found Simon's parents sitting on the couch waiting for me in their night attire. I just rolled my eyes and walked past everyone after greeting them.

## CHAPTER 7\*

I walked into the bedroom and Simon tried to stop me, I pushed him aside and rushed to the bathroom. I sat on the toilet seat just thinking of everything that I have done with Lucky. The way he touched my skin, I looked inside the shirt and I had marks on my breast and chest, I could hear the way he moaned my name. How he was sweating on top of me. I could picture the way we moved together as one his lips on mine, the way I called out his name it has been a while since I felt that way. It has been a while since I was touched like that.

It is a pity it is not with the man I have married. Oh Lord what have I done? I could feel my tears coming down from my eyes, I am a church goer a believer, a woman of faith. And now I am a cheater who was pushed by her husband who hits on her, who cheats on her, who rapes her for his personal gain, and mostly calls her names.

I have become him because he won't let me go. I have sinned I am a sinner. I am the victim of my circumstances and it was not by choice, I have loved a man who is a wolf in a sheepskin. I have given myself to a man who calls me fat and ugly. I have lost to a man who would rather see me suffer and perish in his hands. Since he is the devil who made me I guess he is the devil who will kill me.

He kicked the door open and found me sitting there in my thoughts

Him: is this the time to return home?

I looked at him I don't even want to be here

Me: you said I should come home you didn't specify what time

Him: we are married I shouldn't have tell you the time. You need to respect me as a man not just any man you fucken husband

I scolded, stood up and tried to walk past him, he allowed me and I walked to the bedroom he followed me

Him: so are you sleeping with him?

Me: who?

Him: don't play dumb with me

Me: I am lost

I tried to keep my cool avoiding to answer him because if he knew the truth I am as good as dead

Him: my parents came here to fix this between us and you are out there whoring around

Me: I didn't call them maybe if you have told me I would have made a plan of not whoring around

I felt a hot slap across my face

Him: don't test me

Me: you not a subject mos

He hit me again and I didn't even produce a tear he doesn't deserve them

Him: you left my car at your workplace and you come in another man's car

Me: you can catch a taxi and go fetch your stupid car and since you know how to get into my office might as well take the car keys they are on the desk

Him: you are such a filthy whore

Me: am I now? With who Sindy? Am I a lesbian now that I whore around with her

He lifted his hand and I covered face with my hands waiting for the worse to happen

Him: take off these clothes they disgust me and thinking that shit dropped you off at our house

Me: really who dropped me off here at our house?

Him: I heard you moaning and screaming in that car hell I am sure the whole fucken neighbourhood heard you

Me: was i screaming Sindy's name?

I tried to act cool to hide the fact that I was scared at this point thinking that my fate could be sealed within this moment. I just didn't think I was moaning that loudly I hope it hurt him to the core hearing his faithful wife getting it from someone else. I felt dirty like a cheap whore but I am not going to feel guilty anymore

Him: I SAID TAKE OFF THESE CLOTHES

Me: if I don't want to



Him: than that is your problem because I am going to burn them whether they are on you or off

I thought he was joking until he came back carrying a lighter and paraffin he poured it on the clothes which were still on my body

Me: okay I AM TAKING THEM OFF PLEASE SWITCH OFF THE LIGHTER

He just smiled and walked closer to me I quickly removed the clothes just as he set fire to the pants. My face was starting to be messed up by my tears and blood coming from my nose thinking I nearly lost my life. His parents got in while the fire was on and I rushed for my gown to cover my body

F.I.L: are you crazy Simon this is not how things are done

Her: son please you could have killed her

She was crying on her husband's shoulder while I was shaking looking down at the burning clothes on the floor

Her: Amanda do you see what you have done?

I looked at her

Me: what did I do?

Her: this is the price you pay for cheating on your husband

Me: excuse me? Did he tell you about...

Her: save it i don't want to hear it sies you and your filthy lies disgust me. See babakhe this is why I did not want to approve this marriage she is a bitch who goes hopping from bed to bed for all we know she could be lusting after you

F.I.L: No! This is not how you should talk especially without getting the facts straight for all we know our son could be in the wrong

Her: so you are taking her side?

F.I.L: can you talk like someone who has sense look at her she is bleeding from the nose her eye is pink and clothes are burning in their bedroom argh sies I have never talked to you like this but I am ashamed to call you my wife

Her mouth was opened wide

F.I.L: makhoti came sleep in the guest bedroom please

Him: no she needs sex to save this marriage right baby

His father punched him on his face

F.I.L: voetsek man RESPECT YOUR WIFE. You disgust me

My father in law escorted me to the bedroom and I thanked him as soon as he left. I closed the door and slid down on it trying to stop it from opening should he decide to come in the middle of the night. When I woke up in the morning my body was heavy and locked in the position I slept in it took a minute or so to get the blood flowing again. I got up and the cramps where too much to bear, I dragged myself to the bed and looked up at the ceiling

After an hour or so I stood up, opened the door and got to our bedroom, I took my things and rushed to our bathroom he was still sleeping. Just as I was about to enter I felt down there and noticed I was a bit sticky dammit we didn't use protection in the car I need to get morning after pills although I do go for the three month prevention.

When was the last did I take a shot I mean I don't have sex with anyone at least I didn't have sex with anyone then. Dammit I need to check for STDs Simon also didn't use condom when he raped me who knows what Sindy is carrying. I wore my clothes and walked back to our bedroom I saw my phone next to him and I took it i laughed because I changed the passwords. The lawyers left a message telling me they served Simon with divorce papers, Lucky called and the flashbacks hit me again

Him: hello

His voice sent my blood pressure up

Me: hello

Him: what did he do to you?

Me: he burnt the clothes

Him: are you okay

Me: yeah I thought you would be worried about your expensive suit

Him: it's just material I can get it anytime, you, your life is more important

Me: he nearly burnt it on me

Him: I think I should pay you guys a visit

Me: no please he knows your car

Him: don't worry just change today I am taking you out

Me: what no Lucky last night was a mistake we shouldn't have slept together I am still married

Him: it's not a mistake if you enjoyed it twice

Me: I was emotional

Him: come on we will talk about this together

Me: Lucky this is wrong

Him: but it feels right doesn't it?

I just smiled

Him: look if you don't feel like coming its fine

Me: I need to see Anele

Him: than we will go past her house

Me: okay

Him: I will pick you up at 3 bye

He hung up and I texted my mother to come with my father because the in laws were here. I walked to the kitchen and found his mother making breakfast, I sat on the couch and changed the channel

Her: I was watching

I looked at her and back at the screen she can go dictate at her house. Soon everyone was sitting in the lounge eating I told her I wasn't feeling well and I did not want her food what if she poisons my food

F.I.L: I think we need to address the elephant in the room

Me: which is

F.I.L: the fact that your marriage is falling apart

I looked at Simon and told them everything

Her: don't you pin this on my son

Him: ma Sindy took me to a sangoma and they told me my wife is trying to take my house and money from me

Me: really Simon

Her: I knew you were an evil witch

She stood up and was close to my face

Her: if anyone is leaving this house its you

Me: well sorry to pop your bubble it going to be split fifty fifty since I contributed

She was about to hit me when her husband pulled her and Simon picked me up pulling me to the side the door opened and my mother came in she rushed to Simon who was pinning me to the wall. She turned him around and punched him a couple of times on the face, kicked his manhood as he dropped she kicked him all over his body

Me: mommy stop

Dad: Sibongile please

Mom: if you ever lay your filthy fingers on my daughter you will curse the day you were born

She walked past Kedibone my mother in law and slapped her so hard on the face

Me: enough! This is why Simon and I should divorce, my lawyer notified me that you got the divorce papers so please sign them and let me go. This is why I called my parents we are done Simon

I walked to the bedroom and packed the reminder of my clothes, as I walked to the door Simon called my name and I closed the door behind me and called Anz since I left my car at her house

## CHAPTER 8\*

I walked out and sat by the lawn outside my house waiting for Anele to come although I did say I will meet Lucky i will just have to tell him I am squatting at my friend's house. I finally feel free no more pain and drama. Lizzy came to sit next to me

Her: hey

I looked up at her and smiled

Me: hey how are you?

Her: I am good but I should be asking you that

Me: I am great

She put her arms around me and rested her head on my shoulder we sat like that each lost in their own little world I wiped the tear that came out and tried to be brave in front of my friend

Her: last night I saw fire at your house around 1am I wanted to come but Sibonelo told me to mind my own business we nearly fought and I gave up

Me: it is fine nothing happened and I am okay actually I am free

Her: what do you mean

Me: finally I can let go friend

I looked at the ring and smiled kissing it before I tucked it in my pocket as much as it looks simple it pained my heart doing it, I wanted to keep it on my finger but what does it symbolise

Her: you mean your marriage is done for good?

Me: yeah I can feel sunshine now

I looked up inhaling the air tears still reached my eyes because I was not happy i wanted him to come out of the house and apologise promising me he will change but that will never happen

Me: and it feels good. Say last night did you hear people having sex?

Her: no. where there people having sex? I only heard a car hooting for a long time I thought maybe they were in danger

I chuckled

Me: okay

Her: do want to come inside

Me: no I am waiting for Anele I don't know what is taking her so long

We just sat there talking my neighbours past and greeted us mostly eyeing my bags. A car approached I had no idea who it was. It was a range rover and the windows went down. I looked at the driver and it was Lucky he took off his shades slowly trying to be sexy

Me: where did you steal this car?

Him: I told you not to worry

Me: I am starting to be suspicious

Her: who is this

Me: oh Lizzy this is Lucky. Lucky this is my friend Lizzy short for Elizabeth

He got out of the car and kissed the back of her hand she was even blushing. She looked at me and told she needs to go back inside we hugged while lucky loaded my bags in his car. He came to join me on the lawn

Me: we should be leaving

Him: where are you going yo stay?

Me: with Anz

Him: who is that

Me: Anele

Him: okay wait here

He went to the car and came out carrying an ice-cream container with two spoons

Me: you got to be joking me. We going to eat ice-cream at my ex home

Him: might as well. I had this feeling you hadn't eaten anything all day.

Me: thanks how nice of you

We ate the ice-cream silently while I leaned on his shoulder what surprised me is the fact that my parents were still inside the house what the hell are they doing there I hope my mom is not killing Simon at all. We got in the car and I asked him to drop me off Anele's place

Me: you don't have to wait

Him: what about me taking you out

Me: I just need to be on my own for now, just give me time

He folded his arm causing me to look down

Him: you will get in touch with me right

Me: yes I will

He cupped my face causing me to look at him, he took my head in both his hands and kissed me on my forehead I closed my eyes processing every emotions in

Him: call me

He whispered in my ear feeling his skin against mine brought all the memories I wished he kissed me one last time

Me: I will

I walked inside and he stood up the car watching me

Me: are you not leaving

Him: I am waiting for you to go inside

Me: okay

I walked in towards the back and found Anele sitting there facing the sun

Me: are you kidding

She jumped up and rushed me

Her: babe you are here

We shared a brief hug and she eyed my bags

Me: yeah and I asked you to fetch me

Her: eish I had life problems in the morning

Me: well I am here to be your roomy now

Her: good but don't go in now because....

I didn't listen to her finishing her sentence and I wish I did because when I entered the kitchen naked man was cooking and it really smelled good. I screamed for a few second and when he turned around I couldn't stop staring at him I even went up and down his body man this is a sin I turned around fast and bumped into Lucky

Him: enjoying the view too much I see

I stuttered

Her: I told you not to go inside meet Jabu he is planning to be our roommate

She turned to Lucky

Her: chomy who is this

I focused on her

Me: this is Lucky

Her: the Lucky

Me: yeah pretty much

Her: not bad

Him: guess I will see you at work

He pulled me out with him and placed his hands in my waist

Him: bye and don't drool too much on that guy because I will kill him

Me: jelly

I chuckled because he was tensed up and he let lose a little he kissed me and walked to the car I waved at him before he drove off, Anele came to join me and I playfully hit her

Me: you dog you ditched me for a dick

Her: chommy yami it was good I couldn't let it go

Me: you not even ashamed

Her: please I can see you got some from that guy that is why you neglected me

I grinned, only because I am hiding the shame burning me inside

Her: ah details come on this calls for a celebration. Finally a dick went up that dead whole damn I thought I would never see this day

She grinned wider

Her: you cheated

Me: I did no such

Her: agree to disagree

We sat on the couch and I told her everything and she couldn't stop laughing we ate the remainder of the ice-cream man it felt good being in her arms just chilling like this. Jabu didn't leave his room only when his girlfriend popped by did he come out and made eye contact with Anele and I knew it was because they had sex the whole time I waited for her as much as I wanted to judge them i couldn't I did the same with Lucky. At around six they decided to go out but I wanted to be left alone.

After they left I took a glass and wine I found in her fridge and walked to the bedroom I sat on the bed and gulped the first glass. As much as I can say freedom my heart was aching because I left a man I once loved. I never thought I would be here one day. As young girls most of us have this picture perfect view of life, getting married having kids and pets living in a big house working, everything going great. Nobody pictures themselves divorced down and out nobody pictures themselves divorced at my age or being unfaithful to their partners. I have become everything I have never pictured. My mom used to tell always leave room for disappointment in your life she never told me it would hurt this badly.

I played "why does it hurt so bad" still drinking my wine I climbed the bed and hugged my pillow all my emotions just came at once and I cried myself to sleep. What have I done in



life to deserve this? What did I miss that broke my marriage? I said a long emotional prayer before I slept just questioning God about why he hates me this much

\*Flashback Dream\*

It was our wedding we decided to get married in traditional ceremony after I married Simon in court because our families didn't want us to get married. The ceremony was beautiful but he had to pay severely for marrying me without consent and damages for Mpho who was a couple of months old. I wore my Xhosa attire and he wore his Setswana attire, I changed when we arrived at his home and I wore my Setswana attire and was given the name Botshelo. We danced and had fun all day both families seemed to accept our wedding. At night he dragged me to a park and we were alone chilling, I sat on top of Him and we kissed

Me: we should christen our marriage here

Him: is that my little daughter talking

We laughed because last week I found out I was pregnant

Me: could be

We kissed some more and I was grinding on him

Him: will do it in bed the proper way

I left traces of my kisses on his face

Me: is it always going to be like this?

Him: look up at the sky you see sometimes the stars are there, sometimes it's clear and the moon shines alone, sometimes there are clouds and sometimes a thunder. There are going to be happy days like I said in my vows and sometimes the moon will shine alone which will be the calm in our marriage the could are the days we argue hence the clouds and the storm are the days our marriage will be tested beyond but we will find our way back to each other. Honey there is a kid behind

I sat up and went to her it was too late for a kid to be outside she looked around 6 and lost I asked her name and she kept looking at my husband deep in his eyes he was uncomfortable and even shifted his collar a couple of time like he was choking. Before she introduced herself as Sindisiwe there after she ran away way

\*present\*

I woke screaming her name as she ran away in my dreams. I was sweating and shaking Anele held me and dragged me back to sleep kissing my forehead

\*CHAPTER 9\*

I tried to sleep but I couldn't her face kept haunting me i looked at Anele crying while she held me to her

Me: sindisiwe

Her: who is that? You called out to her a couple of time in your sleep

Me: remember on my wedding day when Simon and I went to the park

Her: and made out in the park

Me: that never happened anyway there was a small child who came to us

Her: oh I remember you telling me this and the child ran away

Me: yeah well how old is sindy?

Her: maybe in her early 20s

Me: that child was around 6,7 or 8 meaning by now she is in her early 20s what if she always want to break our marriage? What if our marriage was happy without her? What if she is Sindy and she is a witch?

I was trembling as I said this

Her: no baby please go to sleep now this is insane

Me: but

Her: shh baby go to sleep stop torturing yourself like it's not healthy

I turned and faced the other way and closed my eyes I had to get this off my chest

Me: does he know how hurt I am? Is he crying were ever he is? Do men know the kind of pain they put us through with their actions? Does he even care? This hurts

I couldn't control my emotions again and started crying again She wrapped her arms around me and kissed my cheek

Her: baby please just go to sleep

She also started crying like something was eating her inside

Me: what's wrong? Why are you crying?

Her: I am sorry I am so sorry babe please forgive me

Me: why?

Her: just sleep please just rest your eyes

Me: babe

Her: no I will be fine

We just slept like that and in the morning I woke up and looked at the windows I wanted to get up and go to church, I so wanted to release all this hurt pain and anger on God on the life he has given me why did he put me through this? Why does he hate me so much? I hate this so much?

Her: morning sunshine I made breakfast

I wanted to look at her but I did not have the energy to move I couldn't move I had no energy left in me I didn't move at all

Her: come on babe please

She tried and I didn't budge until she left me alone I felt tears coming down my eyes, every emotions I had the happiness and sadness the tears the pain I experience in that marriage. I so wish he feels the same pain I feel, it's funny how people thing you weak for crying over someone but he was my everything we did everything together we were together for long time we got used to the situation. I wish he didn't take my happiness away from me. I spent the whole day in bed and I didn't get up nor eat no bath I disgust myself.

Monday morning I woke up when my alarm went off, I dragged myself off bed and took a quick shower I wore my matching tight suit and walked to the kitchen to make a quick snack I really was hungry

Her: hey

She was sleepy looks like she just woke up

Me: morning are you alright

Her: yeah how about you

Me: I am fine thanks

Her: are you sure you are okay yesterday you didn't leave your room

Me: yeah I couldn't be more happier

Her: come on babe I have known you from when you were 5

Me: are you ready to tell me what you were apologising for

Her: yeah

She stood up and walked toward the bathroom

Me: Anele Peterson

Her: we will talk when you come back from work

Me: just know I am not letting this go

I walked to my car man I missed my baby and and drove her straight to work when I got in I closed the door more like locking it I did not want people from work to come in and out as they pleased they only saw me when I had to go to the meeting with the other managers they where discussing the problem that happened on Monday or was it Tuesday? I really wasn't interested I walked to my office as soon as the meeting was done.

I didn't even check the time at all I just kept working on paper work that needed to be done I even finished the charts and did rosters for three months. I heard a knock on the door and I knew it was Lucky I felt my skin and I realised I was crying I wiped my tears and continued listening to the knocking. Why should I stop myself from happiness what if Simon is seeking comfort in Sindy's thighs and I am crying like an idiot. The time I stood up the knocking had stopped and I opened the door he was not there, I walked out of my office into th corridor and bumped into him when he came from the corner

Him: hey

He adjusted his body so his face was directly facing mine

Me: hi where you know Knocking on my door?

Him: yeah

We walked into my office and he closed the door before he picked me up and put me on the desk with him between my thighs

Me: Lucky please I just...

He wiped my tears and kissed my forehead

Him: relax

I smiled weakly and he gently bit my lower lip with his teeth

Him: I just wanted to ask if you want to go to dinner with me

I checked the time and it was almost 6

Me: I didn't notice the time but thanks

Him: good I deserve this after the long day I had

Me: tell me about it

He looked at me

Him: well first of all I noticed my boss worked up for nothing on Friday night well the reward was great

Me: Lucky please

He bit his lower lip smiling

Him: anyway we set a meeting for Friday but it was Friday night after I dropped you off so i sent everyone including you emails telling them the meeting will be this Monday

Me: oh

Him: and you had a meeting with safety department I went there when you didn't come out. Oh and are you done with the performance for your employees and captured the time sheets to know who gets what for what hours paying for over time

I looked at him shoot I forgot to do everything he just said I was busy with work I missed last week

Him: it's fine just do it tomorrow

Me: tomorrow I have a hectic day I have to interview students who applied here

Him: it's okay after dinner you can students come to my house and we can work through it

Me:do you want to steal my job?

Him: I wish but Keegan loves you more. Anyway we can go in your car

I nodded and he kissed my forehead as he was about to walked Mr Pillay called my office

Me: boss

Him: you haven't left the office you know I don't pay overtime right

I chuckled

Me: you know I can resign right

Him: wait for me I am coming

Me: sure

I hung up and told Lucky to wait for me in my car I gave him my car keys the door opened and my plant manager came in smiling

Me: it when you smile that I become scared

He walked closer to me and hugged me tightly

Me: and now

Him: I heard about your divorce

Me: I am sure you and half the of the firm

Him: no just me and Lucky is the one that told me

I nodded

Him: do have a lawyer

Me: yeah my friend got me one

Him: I have a shark off a lawyer allow me to apologise to you for being rude last week and recommend him to you

Me: I don't have the money to pay him Keegan

Him: I will

Me: you don't have to

Him: just allow me as a friend and colleague I promise I won't pry into your business

Me: why are you so nice all of a sudden

Him: I don't know but I hate seeing you sad and it makes you slip up I saw how Lucky is trying his best to save your ass please don't allow this to affect your joy plus I saw in the meeting how disconnected you were, I want to see you smile you deserve to be happy at sometime

Me: you are a very nice boss and an asshole at the same time well since you are offering thank you

We both smile

Him: there it is the beautiful smile I have been missing since

I tried looking away blushing

Him: and those dimples beautiful

Me: your wife is going to kill me

He was about to leave and he turned around

Him: we need to promote your lover boy

Me: I don't know what you talking about but yeah we need to promote him

Him: come on I walked past here on Friday I heard everything the way you moaned

My mouth was opened

Me: we were watching porn

Him: hmm interesting I might just fire you but than again you needed some

Me: oh my word you are such a pervert and an asshole

He laughed and walked out I packed the rest of my staff and we bumped into each other at the door and wave each other goodbye

Him: oh by the way the two of us next week are going to Cape Town I have been waiting for your confirmation email

Dammit Simon broke my work phone no wonder I didn't get these emails

Me: what is it for?

Him: conference

Me: can I confirm verbally

Him: yeah but I still need you to do it via email

Me: yes boss

He chuckled

Him: bring something sexy

He yelled

Me: kill that dream

I yelled back and heard him laughing just as I was about to enter the car, I got in and looked at Lucky he started the car and drove us to the restaurant we got a table and sat opposite each other

Me: you know this is a date right

Him: no we just getting to know each other on a deeper level

Me: sounds more like a date

Him: yeah we slept together before our date

I choked on my drink

Me: anyway you know a lot about me and I know nothing about you either than the fact that I know your house

Him: you stalked me I know

Me: you have to be kidding me I had no idea you lived there

Him: I don't believe you

Me: tell me why would I stalk you

He shrugged his shoulders

Him: anyway to answer your question I live alone and I have a three year old whom I see on weekends depending on his mother's mood since she is married she got pregnant before marrying the guy who happens to be my best friend. It was a dirty mistake we made she wanted revenge thinking he was cheating so we got too drunk and woke up naked. Only to find out the next day he wanted to marry her so she told him the baby is his and I distance myself from it and she promised me to see my child but we still keeping it a secret he is my boy

I looked at him with a straight face thinking he is going to say he is joking but he looked remorseful

Me: hey I am not here to judge you only God can do that we just humans we do make mistakes

Him: I hope he never finds out I pray everyday because he is becoming suspicious

Me: you will tell him the truth when the time comes, just work on building your relationship with your son, I regret sending my children to boarding school now only Mpho keeps in touch with me but as for Naledi she hates me and her father we have tried but she is very distant

Him: I am sorry to hear that

Me: I guess it is a part of life

The dinner went well after dinner I texted Anele that I would be seeing her tomorrow and we will continue the conversation about her apologising something inside me told me that my whole life is about to change but I hope it is not what I am thinking she can't betray me like can she?

We drove to Lucky's house and took out my laptop, he really is a nice guy he helped me all night and we slept around 2:30 am. We woke up at 5 took a shower and went to work together, he got off before and I went in after him, I conducted interviews the whole day, when we were done I went to my office and checked my mails and confirmed with Keegan. My phone rang and it was my pastor I laughed to myself he must be asking why I didn't come to church

Me: hello

Him: Amanda how are you holding up

Me: I am okay and you pastor



Him: I am fine I was just shocked to see your husband at church

Me: what?

Him: yeah he asked me to intervene in your life

I chuckled Simon is the devil

Him: what is this I hear about your divorce and you sleeping with men outside your house

Me: with all due respect since you had so much time discussing me with him why doesn't he tell you everything

Him: Amanda you and Simon need to come for some marriage counselling before you agree to divorce

Me: the marriage is over

Him: so will your role in this church what example are you setting for the youth, if it gets tough on your marriage just give up? We are going to have these sessions starting tomorrow at 6 don't be late, I am highly disappointed in you

I kept looking at my phone after he hung up What the hell is Simon playing if he thinks I am weak and will fall for his tricks he has another thing coming

#### \*CHAPTER 10\*

I just sat there staring at my phone who told this pastor he has the right to judge me he might be a pastor but he is not my father and he is not my mother and most importantly he is not God himself. One of my colleagues came in she was looking so good and happy we had a chat about work and so on i really wanted her to leave so I could carry on with my work, at lunch time a call came in for me

Me: hello

Caller: hello dear is this Florence Maleka I am going be your new lawyer thanks to Mr Pillay

Me: nice to meet you I am Amanda Tshetlo

Her: soon to lose that surname I realise your husband has not returned the papers to your previous lawyers

Me: not just that but he wants me to attend marriage counselling with him

She chuckled

Her: everything makes sense now when I look into your account yes I hack into my clients database I know it is an ethical violation but I want to know everything

Me: its okay what is going on

Her: did you notice that your husband has changed everything financial

Me: how?

Her: well first of all who pays school fees

Me: me

Her: well you owe school fees and apparently you have be "taking" money from your husband's account so I think your husband is trying to play the cheated husband whose wife ran away with the money so he can get everything from the divorce and everything seems legit

Me: what?!

Her: yes so now I bet with my whole life he is trying to get evidence of you cheating and so we are going to turn this game around

Me: how

Her: well for now you are going to go to the stupid counselling session

Me: it will happen everyday I have to go somewhere with my boss

Her: leave Keegan to me, I see you filing divorce because of domestic abuse

Me: yes he hit me

Her: did you report him

Me: he has friends with members of the police...

Her: you are going to go back home and I need hard evidence we only going to get two weeks max if you anger him remember a leopard never changes it's spot we are going to strip this bastard he won't see this coming so I want you to attack from within

Me: and if he kills me

Her: he will never even get to see that We just need to be smart we going to beat him at his own game you will be a dutifully wife sweet and innocent and we strike when we get all the evidence

The thought of going back to that house I can't do this

Me: wait we have witnesses for him abusing me his parents were there

Her: I wouldn't rely on them if I where you no matter what no parent will want to turn their backs on their child regardless of him being an idiot

I sighed out in frustration

Her: we just need to know his game plan, you are stronger than him we don't want this to be messy at all I will keep checking the loopholes

She hung up and I banged my table in frustration, I started trembling at the thought of going back there and facing him again I decided to call my mom I need all the support I could get she was swearing and cursing him causing me to smile. I hung up and continued to do my work double checking if I am missing anything or messing up with anything else. just as I am about to knock off my Boss came in

Him: no over time today

Me: hey boss and no I need to leave

Him: I just talked to Florence to bad you can't come with me

Me: unfortunately circumstances are preventing me

Him: man I was looking forward to it well since you not going I am just going to take Nicole

Me: why don't you take Bongani I mean he is QC

Him: no no no anyway tomorrow we are interviewing three people Lucky, Petros and Jonas for the position of senior lab technician meaning they will be your second in command

Me: and let me guess we going to give it to Lucky

Him: you know it

Me: you know people are going to be thinking that I am doing him favours because he is close to me

Him: people will always talk, let them be, don't stop your man from shining

Me: get out of my office

He laughed and exited, I got a text from the lawyer giving me her address and asked me to come see her, I texted Lucky that I am leaving and he told me to relax he will make a plan to get home. I arrived at her offices and man the place was big

Receptionist: good day mam how can I help you

Me: I am here to see Ms Maleka

Her: do you have an appointment

Me: no but she texted me

Her: I am sorry I just can't allow you in without an appointment

Me: just call her please

Her: okay fine mam just take a sit

lyhoo why is she so rude

Her: okay you can go through

Me: thank you

I got in and shook hands with Ms Maleka and she offered me something to drink

Her: I like meeting with my clients face to face and with a case like yours this is going to be interesting I want you to explain everything from the beginning till the end while I am going to discuss something with you

I told her the whole story from the beginning till I found him and Sindy

Her: we need to label him as criminally insane he needs to be arrested not even stripped of everything, I couldn't help notice that last year you changed the title deed of the house how did he not notice that

Me: he was not interested in anything I have to say so he just signed everything I handed to him without double checking so my kids names are there owners of the house my mother is the only one who is legally their guardian with anything to do with their finances my dad is the one who advised me

Her: wise man, and your pay does not go directly into your bank account rather your mother's account

I nodded

Me: everything I owe my mother owns so if he is to get anything from me it will be 25 of my 50%

She clapped hands for me

Her: your husband underestimated you didn't he?

Me: my father is the one who changed everything when my husband first started changing

Her: well I did a check up on your husband and what I told you earlier is what is happening he has even hired a private investigator to track down who you hang out with and where what time and how. He wants to discredit you and your witnesses

I stared at her

Her: don't worry I am not that much concerned you shouldn't too we will win i am sick and tired of men underestimating women we will make an example out of him he won't see this coming I repeat thank you for your time miss please do enjoy the rest of your day

Me: thank you same goes to you

Her: oh and don't forget to pay your kids school fees and keeps slips for everything you do for them

Me: thank you

I left the building got in in my car and drove straight to Anele's house poured wine and took a long shower washing away the negativity of the day an sms came through and it was Simon it read

"hope to see you tomorrow at 6 to fix this broken marriage but judging from things I can see you are not willing to fix our marriage remember I love you honey even though you cheated on my with that person who dropped you off take care my beautiful wife"

I looked up and chuckled I guess this is a part of his act it's fine I will give him a show. a knock came on the door

Me: come in

Her: hey I came to tell you I am leaving

Me: where to

Her: I am going to visit my parents for a week

Me: you hate your parents

Her: there is something I need to sort out

Me: so when are we going to talk about you apologising the other day

Her: when I come back Jabu is around if you need someone to talk to bye

Me: ANELE! ANELE!

She walked out fast and I heard her car drive off as I wore my towel around my body chasing after her. I walked back inside and bumped in Jabu we shared an awkward stare before we greeted each other I excused myself rushed into my bedroom applied some lotion and wore my pj's before switching off the lights and going to sleep.

Waking up the following day was straining the stress of thinking about everything was taking its toll I could even see the eye bags and I was slowly aging in the few days I have experienced stress I looked carefully and I swear I can see grey hair coming out. I sat down staring at my face and tears came down a knock disturbed my thinking

Me: I am almost done

Him: okay

I dressed up quickly and grabbed a fruit before leaving. When I got to work I bumped into Lucky and we walked to my office

Him: bossy lady

I smiled

Me: hello

Him: did your phone notify you?

Me: no why? Am I missing something

He looked at me with half closed eyes and walked over to the door he shut it and walked to me with a smile

Him: well.

He planted a kiss on my lips

Him: today is my birthday and I am having a braai and my you dear are invited

Me: well happy birthday and today is Wednesday meaning tomorrow I still have work so no can't do

Him: I don't think I asked, I told you

Me: fine but I will see you after 7 maybe

He picked me up and put me on my desk he was between my thigh and started kissing me running his fingers up and down my slit soaking my underwear I moaned in his mouth and he made contact with me through his jeans I could feel his manhood and we continued dry humping

Him: something to make you think about coming

I was out of breath and he kissed me one last time before he left I walked over to my chair facing the screen and started typing

Keegan: are you ready for the interviews?

Me: what interviews

Him: senior....

Me: oh um sorry it slipped my mind for a moment so we doing it now

Him: the sooner the better plus I have loads of things to do

Me: we all do

Him: you are not pressured like me

Me: okay let's go

Him: get up and stop siting down

I stood up and we walked out together

Me: you are a pain you know that

Him I know

We entered the boardroom Nicole who ia also QC and Michelle the HR were there the interviews went well Michelle told me she had to prepare the contract while we discussed the salary. After worked I had a litle discussion with Florence and I prepared myself mentally to play my part concerning today's counselling

As soon as I saw his car parked outside our church I swear all the depressive thoughts hit me at once. You can do this I know I can do this I just need to do this.

I opened the door and got out closed and locked the car.

I am doing this, here I am let's get this over and done with

Pastor: aaa! Amanda you made it

Me: evening pastor

I looked over at Simon and I could see he was not happy at all, I took out my phone and pressed the recording button without him seeing

Me: hi honey

I kissed his cheek and he returned a smile

Pastor: let's begin with what went wrong in your marriage

Him: cheating!

I looked at him

Him: she slept with a man outside our gate while my parents were home

Me: I did not do such!

I looked at the pastor with tears in my eyes

Me: you know what hurts the fact that he slept with a woman old enough to be our daughter in our matrimonial bed. I found them and he kicked me out and they continued with me listening in my own house

Him: and you did revenge cheating

Me: I did not! The only mistake I made was allowing that guy drop me off the gate and maybe allowing him to press the hooter for a while just to piss you off

We looked at each other with intense hate I don't even know how I conjured up such a lie

Me: he also hit me and raped me

Him: I DID NOT RAPE YOU

Me: what do you call sleeping with your wife forcefully I did not want to have sex with you

Him: you said our marriage lacked sex

Me: you are delusional I said a lot of things and all you could pick up was sex

Pastor: I think communication is a problem here

Me and Him: fuck you and your communication!

We looked at each other and nearly laughed but the anger was just too much

Me: you wronged me so many times this marriage needs to end

Him: so you can go to your lover boy

Those were the words Keegan said how is this possible

The pastor said a few things about inviting God blah blah blah all I could think about is what Simon said I was even shaking in my chair

Pastor: tonight I am going to task you with staying with the same house

we both nodded and the session ended I did not see the point of this we both drove to the house in separate cars and the thought of going back in this house hurt me but I guess it is part of the game. When we got in we ignored each other and did our own things at 8 I walked into his study carrying his coffee I just wanted to piss him off before I could enter I heard my voice through the laptop his back was facing me. The sound was me having sex with Lucky in my office he tried listening to whose name I was screaming but I was saying it softly and so low he wasn't sure

Him: dammit is it this Lucky or what?

Person through phone: I don't know boss I tried



Him: try harder

Person on the phone: what if it's lucky Gumedede sir

Him: it can't be he doesn't know my wife shit if it's then we dead

I cleared my throat and he dropped the call closing his laptop fast

Him: how long were you standing there?

Me: I just got here I brought you coffee just how you like it

He snatched it from me

He: get out! Out!

I nodded

Me: I have to go either way made plans for tonight

Him: with who I mean Anele went to her parents house

Me: how do you know

He kept quiet and sipped his coffee

Him: be careful who you call your friends

I left him there got in my car, whatever is wrong with Anele I hope it has nothing to do with Simon and my divorce. I drove out to Lucky ' house and the house was still parked with people, he saw me and walked straight to me and directed me to his friends and thank God none of my work colleagues were there . They got drunk while i tried to be sober and he asked me to follow him to his bedroom for some alone time we stood up and walked over to his bedroom plus we had a lot to chat about

Him: meet my son

He was sleeping in his bed and looked very cute I just kept looking at him smiling like an idiot

Me: your best friend?

Him: he us not here she told him she took her son to her patents

I nodded still staring at the little boy

## CHAPTER 11\*

He held my hand

Him: Sandile is a blessing in my life I don't know how i would be without him

I stopped staring at his son and looked at him in his eyes

Him: are you okay?

I shook my head because I was not okay, I was unease the whole night because I was being followed and now I am at the man's house

Him: you have been staring at the gate since you got here

Me: I did not notice that

Him: Manda?

Me: we need to talk

Him: okay what is happening?

Me: we need to cool things off, I am sorry but I need to go back to my husband

Him: to that asshole what is wrong Amanda talk to me

Me: I need to ...

Him: why are you sticking to that bitch of a man

Me: I am doing it for my kids please, anyway the reason we can't be seen together is because he hired a private investigator to track who I hang out with

Him: you mean that idiot in the blue van come on baby there are many people you could be afraid I can sort it out

Me: what you mean you can sort it out

We both kept quiet facing each other

Me: talk!

I shout through my teeth so I wouldn't wake Sandile up

Me: see why we can't be together we don't know each other well I don't know your private activities

Him: Amanda please

Me: I need to go Lucky it has been real but for now we will be work colleagues and friends

Him: I don't want to be friends stop this now

I looked at him

Me: let me go

Him: I will only do that when you tell me you don't love me

Me: please don't do this

Him: tell me you don't love me and I will go just Tell me!

His kid made a noise and and turned to face the other way, I turned to walk and he pulled me to him we were so close to each I could smell him

Him: tell me you don't want me and love me and I promise I will leave you alone

He lifted my face and we shared a kiss I ran my fingers up and down his chest before I wrapped them around his neck he lifted me up and pushed me against the wall and squeezed my ass in the process it felt good having him between me

Him: do you still want to leave

I nodded

Me: Sandile is sleeping and we are going to make noise for him

He chuckled and made me sleep on the side of the bed while he slept on the other side

Me: my husband

Him: don't worry

He held my hand above his son but what he said kept echoing in my head I just had to ask

Me: do you and my husband know each other

He smiled and shrugged his shoulders

Me: are you going to answer me

Him: sleep we will talk in the morning

Me: Lucky

Him: shh!!!

He put his finger on my mouth and we slowly drifted to sleep. I woke in the morning when I heard two voices in my ear

Sandile: babatwo

Him: baby

Sandile: who is this?

Him: let's call him mamatwo

Sandile: Hu. Ah baba once bought a woman and mama was angry when I called her ma and she kicked her and threw her out of the house

I wanted to open my eyes but I didn't want to stop father son bonding

Him: I am sorry you saw that baby

Sandile: it is right babatwo I wish I can stay here nawe

Him: me too baby, let's go and brush our teeth

They left me and I stood up and I looked at my watch it was 9 and I decided to call my boss telling him I won't make it to work I hope I don't get fired from this I have been slacking off this past two weeks and it is not normal. I got up and joined them

Me: good morning

They both greeted me but Sandile looked shy it was cute seeing them brush their teeth like that I took the brush he gave me and I washed my teeth

Sandile: babatwo I am hungry

Me: go you want me to cook for you

He looked at me and Lucky and back at me nodding his little head, I lifted him up and walked to with him to the kitchen I told him to choose his menu and he was picking sweet stuff and eventually I made progress with him we made jokes while I made breakfast Lucky joined and we ate having a light conversation I excused myself at lunch time and drove home.

I got in and screamed Simon's name and got no response I thought of a dangerous idea to help me speed up this divorce process, I walked to his study and he was not here. I poured his whiskey and opened his laptop and found folder's containing pictures of me and other ladies naked in bed with him, I emailed them to me and my lawyer just in case they come in handy and deleted the emails I sent as well as see if he had any other information on me, I opened my email account and work account

Him: snooping in my stuff

I closed all the folders very calmly looking at him drinking my whiskey so I wouldn't act suspicious

Me: I was doing my work

Him: found anything interesting

I shook my head

Him: you don't sleep home and now you are going through my things huh

He walked over to me and I backed up from the chair until I was against the wall

Him: you are testing neh

I shook my head, he wrapped his arms around my neck and banged my head twice against the wall

Him: you fucken bitch

I couldn't talk because my oxygen was cut off everything was becoming blurry I lost all energy.

Him: Amanda can you hear

I tried to respond but everything was so slow

Him: Amanda baby please wake up don't do this BITCH WAKE UP

everything went black, have you ever been haunted by pictures of your life watching your children grow up looking at your marriage all the good time and all of a sudden there is this dark cloud that steals all your happiness watching everything you love vanish in front of you being at a distance suddenly you are alone everything and everyone you know are gone you are just alone and a headache hits you oh no this is not a dream it hurts to even think

Me: ouch

Him: hey can you hear me

His voice was too loud causing me to groan again can't he just shut up! I tried to open my eyes but the light hit me hard

Me: Simon

Him: yes you can hear me, oh thank God you are fine honey do you remember what happened

Me: the sun

I tried blocking it with my hand but still and he chuckled

Him: you need the sun sweetheart

Me: please sun don't

Dammit I am not making why am I not making sense

Him: honey you need the sun to learn not to snoop around

Me: sorry now stop honey

What the hell?

Him: Amanda you are not making sense

Me: SUN!

The sun was hurting me so badly I can't handle this

Him: Amanda don't close your eyes

He lifted me up and made me face the other way away from the sun

Him: honey wait here

He stood and left me there the whole place seemed to be moving and people seemed to be coming in and going nothing made sense

Him: Amanda I came with a doctor

Me: who come go here

The doctor opened my eye and shone the light in

Dr: she is suffering from a concussion

Him: what must I do?

Dr: we need to take her to the hospital

Him: no

Dr: we need to monitor her situation

I can hear all of this but everything was not making sense to me I kept seeing them like they were flying at some point I screamed because I thought I saw Simon as the devil, the doctor gave me something that made me drowsy and eventually I slept

When I woke up I felt like my head was splitting into two parts I held it and felt a bandage wrapped around my head I tried to move but my body was too tired

Him: hey

I looked at him and remembered him banging my head against the wall

Him: take this

He gave me pills and I just looked at them

Him; it's for the headache

I drank them and he sat looking at me

Him: do you want to know why I cheated on you

I looked at him

Him: because you remind me of death Amanda

Me: what

Him: looking at you and your sagging breasts and disappointing body reminds me of death

I felt tears

Him: Sindy reminds me of life

I blinked my eyes multiple times processing what he said, I took my phone and tried to press record he took it and smashed it against the wall while I looked at the door

Him: this is why I hate you, you are predictable and stupid

He tried to slap me and I ducked but he never hit me rather he brushed my face I tried to move his hands from me and he continued until I hit him on his face

Me: you don't get to touch me, why are you talking about death do you want to kill me Simon

He chuckled and brushed my hair

Him: you are not leaving this marriage Amanda it's either your die voluntarily or through the body bag

Me: I won't be the one in the body bag

Him: I admire your strength now get dressed we going to my home

Me: no

Him: this is not a request pack your shit

Me: no I am not going with you

Him: to bad because I took the liberty of packing your shit and taking it home my home we are going there for my sister's wedding so we are going to act like the perfect married couple

Me: when did you become this evil Simon

Him: when you tried to take everything from me we are going to be late now get up hurry

me: you are going to pay for this

Him: who is going to make me? you please?

\*LUCKY\*

My name is Lucky Gumede but I go by the name Lucky Ndlovu once I found out my father was not my actual father, I never thought my mother was the kind of person who would Cheat on my dad. I found out about my paternity when my mom and aunt had a heated argument about my cousins.

Anyway when I was twenty my friend G for Gordon and i where driving with is baby in a car for fresh air and a car came charging towards us and hit us we both survived but his one year old didn't it killed G inside we joined a gang as a way to get revenge on the killer because he was friends with members of the police services and they managed to let him get away with murder. We found out he also killed the parents of a woman called Sindisiwe Zulu and she grew up an orphan

Our plan was to hurt him where it hurts the most and that is to destroy his family and leave him high and dry first we allowed Sindy to be the one to break it but as saying goes girls do catch feelings fast so I took over and started going after Amanda myself at first I thought she was dump and stupid but I got to know her and realised she was a fighter and a woman who believed in truth I admire her strength throughout all of this I realised she was innocent and did not know her husband's deeds. I never thought I would fall for her man I love this woman.

G: mfethu

I opened the door for him

Him: why is my son here

Sandile: baba

Me: Zwethu left him here for my birthday

Him: and I was not invited

Me: you are supposed to be in matatiele

Him: I know but eish mfethu plans changed mxm so you got in to Amanda's pants

Me: yeah I did and now she doesn't want to get further than kisses and she thinks she is winning this war with her husband we need to help her

Him: we deserve a medal for this



Me: yeah and Sindy deserve a whole lot than that

Him: I can't wait for the day it all comes crumbling down for him

Me: I just hope Amanda doesn't hate me after this

Him: do you hear that

Me: what

Him: that is the sound of the whip hitting you hard bruh your are in love with an old woman

Me: dammit I hope it does not mess up our game

Him: just keep your head clear we are almost at the end, Sandi let's go

Sandile: bye bye babatwo

I kissed his forehead

Me: bye bye baby

Him: this is just creepy but thanks for being there for my son

## CHAPTER 12\*

\*AMANDA\*

Me: Simon let me go!

He picked me up and walked to the car with me

Me: I am not going

Him: it's the concussion talking honey come on

He child locked the back doors and he drove out on the way he gave me the phone to call my boss and tell him I won't be in the whole of next week

Keegan: tell me exactly what is going on

My voice was shaky because of the headache and the road spinning was not making it easy

Keegan: if you are in trouble just tell me now

He snatched his phone

Him: my wife is just having a rough day that's all she hit her head hard and now she is suffering from a concussion

Keegan: can I come see her?

Him: I am driving us to my home you will see her next week goodbye sir

He dropped the call and I asked to call my senior lab technician and he reluctantly gave me the phone

Me: hey listen I won't be in the whole week and you got the position so I would like you hold the font for me please

Lucky: Amanda is that you? Why is your voice shaking where are you

Him: she is with her husband and she is suffering from a concussion she hit her head hard

Lucky: I wasn't talking to you.

Him: well she is in no position to tell you what is what

Me: Simon please

He hung up and looked at me before he poked my head hard causing me to have the headache again, I screamed so loudly to the point I passed out I could hear his voice screaming my name but I didn't want to wake up and I don't want to wake up. I felt water on my face and my eyes shot open from the shock

Him: thank God you are fine we are home now

I looked at him

Me: your home not mine

Him: don't make me poke you again

I moved my head

Him: God dammit you are bleeding again we need to change your bandage

Me: why don't we let your family see what you did to me

He redressed my wound and put a wig on my head

Me: I don't want your stupid wig

Him: well tough for you

Me: Simon after this I promise you we done this is the last time you will ever lay a finger on me

Him: so you are choosing body bag wise choice, I will help you bury yourself while you watch your kids being raised by another woman

Me: what comes around goes around Simon

Him: is that so well tough that you won't see my karma

He winked at me and dragged me out of the car and forced me to hold his hand as we walked inside everyone was staring at us while we pretend to be happy

F.I.L: welcome makhoti

He kissed my cheek and he took me to the kitchen I saw my mother in law and she raised her nose up

Me: dumela mama

I was trying to teach myself tswana to please this family

Her: hmm

I walked from her to the bedroom and found Dimpho Simon 's sister

Me: hello

Her: beautiful

She rushed to my hug and we sat down and talked a bit in the middle of the conversation her aunt Matlakale came budging in

Her: who do you think will cook the pots if the makhoti is sitting here gossiping

Dimpho: helang mama wee please just excuse yourself from us

Her: whoa you are so ill mannered and stupid unlike your brother

Dimpho: Aunt get out

Her: you can't chase me out

She roared those words out

Her: this is my parents house

Dimpho: well this is my grandparents house beside your daughter should be the one cooking for us where is she oh I forgot you can't have kids rather live through your brother's children right

I saw tears on her aunts face as much as I hate her but being reminded that you can't children has to be the most painful things ever.

Dimpho: go adopt a child and leave us alone

Her aunt came charging to her and tried to hit her but I stopped her from slapping her niece

Me: listen I will go do your stupid pots and whatnot but you will not hit her while I am here and most definitely not on her wedding days

Mother in law: what is going on here?

Me: ask her

Dimpho explained everything to her mother

Mother: if you ever touch my children

Her: I will touch this one

Pointing at me

Mother in law: she is my children not yours you will not touch anything that didn't come out of your womb

F.I.L: KEDIBONE

me: excuse me

I left the arguing in there and went to the kitchen

Me: hello do you need help

Them: no we have everything under control

I nodded and as I was about to leave they started a conversation about me

Woman1: woo you see when you don't khotisa your daughter in law she never swepted the yard or stayed in this house

Woman2: that is why Simon hits her they did not do things according to custom

Woman1: she thinks she is Mrs Fabulous that is over now life is not as sweet

I just left them talking there and found Simon sitting with his friends

Me: can we talk

He smiled and walked over to me he tried to kiss me and I jerked my face away

Me: can I have your car keys I need to see Anele and my family

Him: kiss me first

Me: please

He shook his head and pouted his lips I felt disgusted looking at him

Him: well we have all day

It took all I had in me and brought my lips closer to him and brushed them against his

Him: not convincing

He pulled me closer to him and french kissed me I wanted to puke right in his mouth

Him: good but I will be driving you

Me: what?

Him: you heard me we are driving together you are not running away from me

He turned to his guys and told them we are returning, it was 5 km from his home town to Anele's and we were quiet the whole time nobody was talking . When we arrived I knocked at her door and she opened when she saw me her eyes changed and she looked down

Me: my friend

Her: Amanda I see you are back with the idiot

Me: no we are not I it is a strategic plan that my....

Her: Amanda you are so weak and pathetic I am ashamed to call you my friendwe are suffering because of the man you love baby

Me: babe please

Her: women get killed everyday because the stick with their abusers you could leave but no here you are

Me: babe you are not listening to me I am going to...

Her: get out of my face

Me: Anele

Her: now

I looked at her

Me: ever since you went out that night you have become different I don't know who you are I am here to tell you I am close to divorcing my husband and you are distancing yourself from me, I hope what ever is eating is enough to save our friendship

I looked at her one last time and turned to walk away the door hooked on my wig and it fell she exclaimed and I put it back on and left

Her: AMANDA! AMANDA! I am sorry please come back AMANDA

I got in the car and let the tears flow

Him: want to talk about it

Me: shut the fuck up and drive

Him: you know I am not a bad person

Me: please leave me the fuck alone SIMON YOU ARE THE CAUSE OF EVERYTHING WRONG IN MY LIFE

My emotions triggered the headache we drove in silence while I took the pills and when we arrived I ran past everyone to our assigned room and rested my head as much as I tried to sleep I couldn't everything is falling apart everything is ruined my life is a pit of misery because I loved a man who I thought was the one who I thought deserved my love but I was kidding myself I just lost my best friend because something is bothering her and I have no idea what it is and why. I hate things I hate my life maybe the world would be a better place with out me. Maybe I am the problem and everyone is accommodating me maybe I am the mistake the world created

Lucky: Amanda look at me

Maybe he was right maybe I will leave this through the body bag

Lucky: baby please!

I turned around he was faxing me how did I even get to the top of this mountain last time I remember I was sleeping on the bed

Him: come to me please

I looked at the pain coming from my wrist and it wasn't a deep cut but I was bleeding, nothing makes sense in my life nothing will ever be alright what if he saves me and does the same and the pain becomes worse

Lucky: NO!!!!!!

last thing I saw I was a bird flying down being free I closed my eyes and felt strong hands holding me

Him: baby Amanda

I looked at him and down

Him: don't ever do this please don't how would your kids be did you think about them

Yes and their lives would be better off without them

Him: Sandile just met mamatwo

I smiled a little while he rocked back and forth with me

Him: don't let him win you are stronger than this he is just a prick

He picked me up and drove me to a hotel we got in his room and helped me clean and called a doctor for me they attended to my wounds and he gave me anti - depressant pills. We got in bed and he wrapped his arms around me he kissed my neck and I turned to face him and wrapped my arms around him. We shared a kiss and he took off my clothes and kissed my breasts while he ran his fingers up and down my skin I jerked to his touch I don't know why but I need this I needed him he makes me feel good and sexy

Him: promise me when things get rough you will think of me and the kids because we are here for you

Me: I promise and I am sorry

Him: no need to apologise he kissed my forehead

we stared into each other's eyes as much as I wanted to ask him how he got here and how he know where I live but I wanted to be lost in the moment

He lifted my leg above his thighs and kissed my neck while he left a hickey he took his time and I could feel his erection on my belly and he took his hand and teased me with it causing me to moan while he gave my breasts attention with his tongue and I felt so good I felt a throbbing down my vagina I wanted him in fast

Me: I want you now

I moaned in his ear and he smiled he slowly inserted himself in and I moaned in pleasure

Him: like that don't you

I smiled while he started going in and out

Me: please go deeper

Him: are you sure

I nodded and smiled he went all in without warning and I screamed and he stayed a bit while I felt my womanhood accommodating him he went out and in again slowly until I could accept him without pain and i scratched his back because the pain was deep and I moaned both in pain and pleasure while he kissed me and giving me attention to my whole body, he parted my legs further and he started going faster and I could feel the built up on my lower abdomen, he started hitting faster again and he moaned as well as I exploded and he continued until he came causing me to have another orgasm.

Him: are you okay

I nodded and smiled

He kissed me again and I closed my eyes to sleep thinking of all that happened I felt so good. I woke in the morning and he helped me up and occupied me to that pricks house I asked him to take pictures of me so I could email them to my lawyer so we can finish building up the case and he smiled taking the pictures, he dropped me 5 houses away and told him to wait for me I struggled to walk a bit because of the night before I just smiled shaking my head for once I was not guilty

Him: where were you

Me: hi Simon

He closed his eyes and dragged me to the bedroom

Him: I can smell him all over you

I clapped my hands

Me: good to know

Him: don't try to act smart with me

Me: Simon I am done

I packed my bags and he took out his gun pointing at me

Him: where are you going?

He chuckled

Him: is he here waiting for you? How will he feel seeing you being wheeled out of here

He removed the safety and corked it

Me: SIMON PLEASE DONT SHOOT I AM SORRY

I screamed at the top of my lungs his dad budged in i closed my eyes processing everything anf i heard three shots going off



\*CHAPTER 13\*

I sunk to the bottom my eyes were still closed I heard him lock the door cursing fuck a lot I wanted to open my eyes but I was scared that once I open I could be in an unfamiliar surrounding maybe meeting the Almighty or meeting the devil.

Dear Lord please forgive for sinning and blaming you for the wrong in my life I know I nearly took the decision of taking my life not so long ago, I know I have cheated and it is stated thou shall not commit adultery, and it is a sin to divorce well Lord please beyond my two sins it was earthly temptations that led me astray my flesh was weak you know the goodness of my heart I have tried to make it work Lord please forgive me and please accept my flesh as holy through the father the son and the holy spirit amen

I opened my eyes and saw his father laying lifeless on the floor I tried to gather the strength to move but my body didn't allow me

Me: you killed him

My voice came out like a whisper

Me: you killed him

Him: ssh! they will forgive you someday hope you understand

Me: what

He was wiping the gun from his fingerprints I got up and tried to rush to the door he tripped me and sat on top of me I couldn't shout his weight was too heavy for me, he put the gun between my hands and whispered I am sorry, he stood up and I tried to chase after him he escaped through the window and someone finally broke down the door as I knelt in front of his father trying to apply pressure to the wound but he was shot in the head as well everyone was looking at me in silence and eventually they screamed the gun was between us

Mother inlaw: nate please don't leave me

She let out a screaming everyone kept looking at me

Me: it wasn't me I didn't do it please believe me

Mathakale: if it wasn't you who did it

The paramedics arrived with the police they declared him dead on the scene and cuffed me arresting me for murder and being in possession of an illegal firearm

Me: please I didn't do it Simon shot his own father

Police: you have the right to remain silent and should you not have a lawyer the state will be required to provide you with one

I sat in the back of the van and watched everyone crying and staring at me, now I really wish Simon had shot me he killed his own father for what exactly because I am leaving him. When we got to the station I was sent to the interrogation room after an hour of silence because I was crying and couldn't say a thing I requested my one phone call, I decided to call Keegan so he can call Ms Florence

Him: hello?

Me: keegan hi

Him: Amanda where are you what's going on I am worried about you

I just cried

Me: please call Florence and tell her I am arrested for murder I will explain everything to you I will find a way to pay her

Him: it's fine don't worry about payments

I told him which prison I was in and he promised to tell her. I was sent back and they tried to make me talk but I told them I will speak when my lawyer gets here thanks to my rights. They sent me to the holding cell and in the morning they told me my lawyer is here. When I saw her I walked up to her and she gave me a hug

Her: are you okay

I shook my head crying

Her: don't worry I am here now we will get out I guess I underestimated your husband we were dealing with the devil himself

Me: I didn't do

Her: any fool can see that you didn't do it honey now tell me what happened

I told her everything and how I was framed she kept a straight face and nodded

Her: thanks to the pictures I got and the voice recording of the session we will work around this okay

I nodded. I spent the whole weekend bars and Lucky came and promised to help me the court date for my bail hearing was on Monday at 8 and I took a quick bath and was taken to the court room, I looked around and make eye contact with Simon he had tears on his face and he looked away

Judge: the state vs Amanda for the Murder of Mr Tebogo Tshetlo proceed

Prosecutor: the state is pleading that the accused is not granted bail given the fact the. ..

I could not hear the rest all I wanted was to be granted bail so I could go home and be with my children and being in prison is not nice and I want to be heard that is all nothing more nothing less and I want them to believe me because I didn't do it I didn't murder him

I rested my head on my hands and started crying again

Judge: after hearing both arguments I do not grant bail for the accused. ...

I sank down and didn't want to hear whatever they had to say I just wanted to go home and fuck this damning evidence that they had on me I was framed for God sake why am I suffering like this they took me in and sent me to custody I was not allowed visitor and only my lawyer could see me

Her: I am afraid things are not looking good

Me: am I going to rot in jail

Her: until we get real hard evidence you are not going anywhere you are stuck here for close to life

I cried while she comforted me

Her: hey don't worry soon someone is bound to slip up and it won't be us

After my spending two weeks the detective came to see me

Detective: Mrs Tshetlo I am sending to the remand center for the for the three months you will be waiting for your trial there

Me: please don't

Him: I am sorry

Me: I am not going to survive

Him: I don't care

He walked away and I sat by the gate avoiding the ladies I was locked up with. In the morning they transported us to the remand centre and they cleaned us and gave us clothes to wear I cried while I entered. I slept on the bed they assigned for me and was woken when someone poked me roughly

Her: yes new one

Me: please leave me alone

She chuckled and looked at the other prisoners

Her: did hear her "leave me alone" voetsek wena muhn I am beth mcbeth I run the show around here this here is my territory are we clear

I nodded

Her: good because I thought we had had a misunderstanding

She slapped me on my face and dropped me to my knees

Her: my shoes are dirty they need to be clean

Me: how

Her: you have a tongue right

I nodded

Her: good now put it to use

I never thought in my life I would be in prison but this treatment was so harsh and now here I am being abused in prison fighting for my rights. I spent the remainder of the day alone sitting watching everyone I didn't even want to eat nor drink anything for lunch During visiting hours the guards came to call us

Guard: Tshetlo

Me: yes

Him: you have a visitor

I followed him and Anele was sitting there starring at me

Me: Anele what do you want?

Her: friend I am sorry for being a bitch

Me: how can I help you with?

Her: babe please I am sorry

Me: I heard you

Her: babe listen

I rolled my eyes

Her: okay remember I was once pregnant and I had a kid and the baby died in a car accident

Me: yes the one you had with that kid? The statutory rape

Her: i didnt know he was younger than me and going his first year well the baby's father made contact with me and it reminded me that it was Simon who was the cause of the accident and he is the reason why my baby died

My mouth started quivering

Her: he told me he was going to avenge our baby

Me: is that why you are angry with me

She nodded

Her: and not just that

She started crying and I looked at her

Her: on Friday when we went to the club I bumped into Simon and I wanted to kill him but he offered me a drink I don't know what happened after and I woke up in his bed he showed me the pictures of us together and told me if I help you through the divorce he will expose us, he told me to keep my distance from him I am so sorry

I cried as she cried

Me: I don't know what to say babe

Her: don't say anything we need to nail this bastard

Me: how I am behind bars I am being framed

Her: be strong friend please be strong

I nodded with tears in my eyes

Her: I love you friend I think someone is here to see you I looked up and I wanted to leave but Anele told me to be patient with her

Me: Sindy

Her: Amanda how are you

Me: I am good

We stared at each other

Her: how are you coping

Me: I am trying

Her: look I am sorry I disrespected you

I looked at her

Her: one day you are going to understand why I did what I did, I can't do this

She stood up and left what was all that about? Why did she even come! Was it to gloat on my misery mxm fuck Simon and his mistress fuck anything and everyone

Beth: you are back sexy

Me: please don't touch me

She chuckled and shove me on the bed while I tried to kick her off she slapped me and I kicked her on the stomach I not about to let another person to hit

Beth: who do you think huh

She got on top of me and strangled me and hit me with multiple fists she spit on me kicked me and walked away I stayed on the cold floor with tears in my eyes this is the life Simon reduced me to, I guess this is the price you pay for being kind and caring this is the price you pay for being faithful. At night I dragged myself to bed and faced the other way to sleep. We were woken up in the morning and I was assigned to clean the toilets it was painful to walk and my one eye was closed when I started scrubbing the smell hit my nostrils and I rushed to puke it out, one of the inmate came to me her name is Khosi and she was nice

Her: are you okay

I shook my head

Her: come

She took me to the cell and took out something and cleaned my face

Her: you won't feel the pain after a few minutes or so

Me:thank you

She nodded

Her: you don't look like the jail type why are you here?

Me: I was framed by my own husband

as I narrated the story the nausea hit again and I rushed to the bathroom, I came back and sure enough the pain was becoming bearable

Her: I think you are pregnant

I laughed as she said this

Me: no I am not

I can't be can I no it is just the stress, I still refused to eat lunch and went straight to bed just to rest I was too tired from all of this everything was moving fast my life does not make sense the guard called me during visiting hours and when I got there Simon was sitting there waiting for

Me: please take me back

I looked at the guard

Him: Amanda!

Guard: you don't want to see him

I shook my head

Him: I have something important to tell you

I walked back inside until I was called again this time Lucky was there waiting for me I wanted to rush into his arms and hug him

Lucky: who did this to you

I shook my head

Me: it doesn't matter

Him: are you okay?

I nodded

Him: I want you to meet my friend we are getting you out

Me: how?

Him: don't worry about the details

Me: Lucky who are you

Him: just trust me on this, I have enough evidence to get you out you don't even need court

Me: how

Him: Cindy helped me tomorrow you will be home

Me: Lucky how did you find me on the mountain

He looked at me

Him: I tracked your phone as well as his thanks to Cindy

Me: how do you know Cindy

Him: we are working together

Me: on?

He kept quiet and looked at me

Me: talk to me!

Him: calm down I will explain everything soon you will be free from all this I promise

\*CHAPTER 14\*

Me: Lucky I need to trust you.

Him: of course you can baby please.

Me: than tell me everything

He was about to tell me when a male figure came in and sat next to Lucky I looked at him and I remembered him from the mall he said his name was G and I should greet my husband. My heart started beating fast and I stood up and looked at him with intense emotions what does he want

Him: baby calm down please sit so you know G

This guy just laughed and looked at Lucky

G: we bumped in the mall and I asked her to greet her husband did you?

I looked at him and was too shocked to say anything

G: I will take it as a no which is a good thing either way, by the way who did this? clearly you need protection

He called the guard

G: you know who to bring

I just kept quiet until I heard a familiar voice greeting them.

Beth: sure bosses

Him: beth mcbeth sit down mfanakhiti



G: now I want you to listen carefully see her we need for whoever touched her to pay secondly nobody will lay fingers on her again and thirdly take good care of her until tomorrow

I looked at this whole situation amused if only they knew who gave me this beating, she looked at me as well and I focused on Lucky I want the truth what is happening

Him: we will talk when you come out I promise I owe you an explanation but I am pretty sure you are going to hate me

Everything was becoming to much for me to handle, I felt a rush of heat coming my way and I felt myself losing senses of everything

Him: Amanda

I tried to open my eyes but the more I tried the more I became disorientated I fanned myself a couple of time until final I was back to my senses I wiped away the sweat

Him: hang in there baby you are almost free

After visiting hours we walked back inside and beth was staring at me the whole time

Her: so you didn't tell them?

I looked at her and shook my head

Me: I am not a snitch

I sat on the bed and everyone was wondering why Beth didn't say anything at all, at dinner time I just continued to sleep I didn't want to eat I just can't stomach anything

Beth: hey wena new one you need to eat

I shook my head and she threw the tray to me

Her: I said eat who the fuck do you think you are a princess eat

I sat and ate while she stared at me with a creepy smile

Her: boss wants me to take care of you what do I get in return hmm?

Me: I don't have anything to offer you

Her: we can think of other ways

She brushed my arms and I moved from her while she laughed

Her:baby girl you got to relax and enjoy the ride

Khosi: beth you don't listen do you

Her: just leave us

Khosi: you are pathetic

Her: I am teaching her to be tough look at her she is weak she needs to fight her own battles she needs to learn Lucky won't always be there for her

Khosi: voetsek

They were at each other's faces and beth just left us

Khosi: sleep

She got in bed with me and slept behind me while I wiping my tears I can't wait to get out of here the things I see are not for the faint hearted. We woke up in the morning Khosi and I shared a shower it was cold water because we were late, she went out first and beth entered and started brushing my back I tried to pull back from her and she pressed me against the wall and sucked on my breasts I slapped her and she laughed while I ran back. I told Khosi and she told me not to worry I am almost out. At noon I was called and told that the case against me was dropped because of new evidence my heart jumped for joy as I took my things and walked out. After they opened the gates for me I saw lucky waiting for me and I rushed into his arms while he brushed my back

Me: I am free

Him: I know

G: well this is touching am I not getting a hug from working my ass off

Me: thank you

I hugged him, I released the hug and stood in the sunlight man it feels good smelling fresh air, before collapsing playing with the soil. I am finally not being held in the holding cells or the center waiting for the trial I was free from all the heartache and pain

Florence: enjoying your freedom I see

I turned to look at her and smiled

Her: you will be pleased to know I filed for an urgent application for divorce

Me: did we get the date

Her: no not yet but I am pushing for it

I nodded

Mpho and Naledi: mama

They both came running to me and I hugged them oh man I have missed my children so much

Naledi: why are you crying

Me: I am not crying I am just happy baby that is all

Naledi: I am sorry I was a bitch mama and I didn't contact you just know I believed you more than dad

I kissed her forehead and

Me: have they arrested him?

Lucky: no but they will arrest him tonight

Me: does he know I am out

Him: no he still thinks you are rotting inside

Me: good keep it like that

Him: so what are we going on your freedom day

Me: nothing I just want to pay him a surprise visit that is all

Him: whatever you say

I skipped around like a little girl and g made a call to his friends I think

G: yeah he is coming I want him to get the full special treatment

.....

G: whatever makes you happy just do it

He hung up and we got in his car they both fist pumped each other. We got to Lucky's place and I ran a hot bath and soaked myself in everything that happened from when I was in the holding cells to when I was at the center kept playing in my mind, I thought life was tough for male prisoners but it is equally hard for female inmates and I just cried knowing I was nearly raped not by beth alone but a lot happened when I was in the holding cells which I am not ready to talk about but they will keep haunting me. I thought you can trust officials but you can't trust anyone that is the lesson I learned.

The door opened during my thinking and I jumped up startled a little he sat on the edge of the bath and gave me a glass of wine

Him: thought you might want this

Me: thank you just give me the whole bottle

Him: don't push it

I smiled at him while he put his legs in and brushed from the back

Him: what happened to your breasts

I looked at him

Him: did someone hurt you

Me: it doesn't matter

Him: I know it was beth

Me: how

Him: Khosi told me I wanted to see if you can trust me enough to tell me

Me: I trust you its just

him: enjoy the rest of your bath Naledi cooked you dinner

I nodded got out and got dressed, I joined them for dinner and we ate over a light conversation, G came in with Sandile he rushed to Lucky first

Sandi: babatwo

Lucky: baby wami

They shared a hug and he saw me and came to me

Sandi: mamatwo a neh?

I laughed silently and kissed his head while I picked him up

Me: mamatwo

Sandile: baba I am so hungry you don't know how hungry I am do you know baba, babatwo hee mama clapped baba mara I am so hungry

I pressed my lips together listening to him trying not to laugh

Sandi: mamatwo who is this and this

Me: this is Mpho and this is Naledi

He greeted them and I gave him a plate to eat after dinner I helped Naledi do the dishes and asked Lucky to accompany me to my house he didn't even asked why. He parked two houses away and I snuck inside opened the bag of chips and checked the time it was 8pm. Simon came in singing it's a wonderful day a song from church he switched on the lights and found me sitting staring at him

Him: how did you get out when did you get out

Me: I am just here for the drama

Him: what drama

Me: you will see

I heard footsteps and his mother and sister came out in their gowns

Me: oh more audience for you I see

Her: what do you want here you killed my husband you are a cold hearted murder

Dimpho: mama please

Me: Simon tell your mother what happened this is your chance to come clean

Her: shut up and get out of our house

Me: our house mine and his house you don't belong here!

Her: you have blood on your hands and my husband's blood

Me: you should direct that to your son

She was about to slap me when the a knock came in

Him: who is it

Person: it's the police sir

Me: perfect just in time

I sat down and eat the snacks, I know I may seem heartless but a lot has happened prison has changed me this crying feeling helpless ends now ends today I am done being played by people actual they need to hear a piece of my mind which I have kept locked for so long

He opened the door and they came in to arrest him

Police1: Simon Lethlogonolo Tshetlo

Him: yes

Police1: you are under arrest for the murder of Tebogo Tshetlo, you have the right to remain silent anything you do or say can and will be used against you in the court of law you have the right to a lawyer and should you not afford one the state will provide one for you

Him: mama I am sorry

Her: leave my child alone here is you murderer she is sitting there smiling

Police2: mama calm down or we will arrest you for obstruction of justice

Her: justice what justice my son is wrongfully accused for a murder his wife did I saw everything she was alone with a gun in her hand bring back my son and take this rubbish sitting here

She came towards me and tried to assault me one of the police man dragged her to the car

Police2: do you want to lay charges of assault

Me: no but you can keep her overnight

Police2 chuckled and nodded

Me: can I talk to her

Police2: sure but be quick we haven't gotten all night

I rushed to her and looked at her

Me: see what happens when you over indulge you become the worst parent, you never taught your child right or wrong you always took his side I was the mean one I was stupid and selfish right wrong, he cheated on me yes i cheated once after I was raped by your child did I regret cheating yes I did but I never brought my sides in the house nor fuck them in our bedroom on our bed I still respected him 15 years I respected your son, I gave him two children went through 1 miscarriage because of him but he was never satisfied he wanted more and got greedy in his cheating. In fact your son did not murder his father you did by not being the parent he needed your husband's blood is in your hands yours alone

She looked at me

Her: you don't get to tell me how to raise my children while you sent yours away from you

Me: away from your son and cheating antics it better they never saw their father humping another woman. Actually know what you don't even deserve this words you are stubborn and stupid and you deserve whatever comes your way goodbye kedi and please enjoy prison for one night have a blessed life

I closed the door and ran to Lucky's car he was waiting outside watching everything unfolding he didn't even say anything he just allowed me to get in touch with my feelings. I released everything I had in me all the pain I have carried with me all the tears and drama I have faced because of this family everything I cried so hard I didn't care if the neighbours saw me with Lucky it was not their business but mine I felt my knees getting weak and I felt my breath escaping me everything was blurry I tried to open my eyes and this time everything was dark my legs were weak I felt someone slapping me slightly over and over but my body gave up. peace everything is so peaceful my world did not make

sense and it was a weird transformation. I saw myself in a garden alone just sitting I was not thinking I was just myself. I felt a hand touching I looked up and saw a small pretty child she smiled at me

Her: mom it is time

Me: time for what?

Her: wake up mama you will see me

Me: where are you going

Her: you will meet me soon mama follow that light

I stood up looking at her I am not her mother I don't even know who she is. I waved her goodbye and she showed me the most gorgeous smile ever and it melted my heart, I walked to the light and everything became black first thing I heard was the heart monitor second thing I heard was some people calling my name, I slightly opened my eyes and saw a man holding a file, he checked my eyes and everything writing something in the file

Him: welcome back Mrs I am doctor Sam and I am happy to say you and the baby are fine we were worried sick due to the trauma and stress you have faced your high blood was sky rocketing but we managed to keep it down and since you haven't been eating properly and following proper diet your blood sugar was low as well you could have died but here you are after a week of being unconscious

I zoomed out on the remainder of the speech I was stuck on baby part I can't pregnant Simon can't be the father dammit it can also be Lucky's.

My head was definitely spinning

me: the what?

I thought I heard him wrong

Him: the baby if you referring to that and we nearly lost it but it is fine now we don't know the gender yet

No this can't be happening I am 40 and I don't even know who the father is I am 40 meaning my child could be at risk of developing mental conditions I heard the heart monitor beeping loudly

Him: mam please stop stressing your blood pressure is going up mam please

I just cried shaking my head the monitors were still beeping fast

\*CHAPTER 15\*

I kept looking at the doctor like he was speaking a foreign language he managed to stabilize me. I couldn't get the fact that I was pregnant. Once was calm he talked to me

Him: do you want me to tell the rest of your family

Me: no I will do it my self

Him: if you want you can see it through the sonar

I shook my head

Me: I don't even know if I want it, I cannot have it, this baby might just be the curse. I don't need in my life

Him: okay I understand, you are still in your first trimester meaning you can still terminate the baby although I shouldn't be encouraging you

Me: thank you doctor

He smiled at me and walked out I kept touching my stomach. I still have babies that need me what if they think I did this on purpose and what if they think I don't love them which is why I sent them to boarding school. I wiped away my tear and continued staring into space the door opened and I heard them screaming my name as they ran to my side

Me: hello my sweethearts

Her: mommy I have missed you so much I thought you were going to die

Me: not anytime soon I wouldn't want to leave you alone

She hugged me and I wiped the tears from her eyes

Me: so where were you staying while I was out?

Him: we stayed with bhuti Lucky although ukoko wanted to come and stay with us

Me: which one?

Him: your mom

I laughed when he said this

Her: so mama ubhuti Lucky neh

Me: hayi wena

Her: ma we are not kids okay I can see how worried he is about you shame muhn you deserve happiness you always made me angry trying to fight a broken relationship with dad



Him: and the sad part was when he visited us with sis Sindy hai it made me angry ma. I told you deserve better

I couldn't stop laughing at these kids

Her: beside mama I also have a boyfriend you know, so if you want some of bhuti Lucky

Me: know what get out

They laughed

Me: I am serious get out

They walked out laughing

Her: mama don't even think about dad ever again we will love him from afar okay and don't be loud with bhuti Lucky

Me: your problem is you are too forward

They closed the door while I continued laughing at them. Lucky came in carrying a bunch of flowers and I took them from me

Him: hey beautiful

Me: hey

He kissed my forehead

Him: I missed you so much

Me: really? Is that the reason why you stayed with my kids?

Him: no I intend on marrying Naledi I mean she cooked for us and cleaned the house

I hit him on the shoulder

Me: I am charging R60 000000

Him: iyhoo uh.ah not about that life mamatwo

Me: only the cutest boy can say that

Him: anyway to update you I have accepted your leave which you applied while you were unconscious

Me: you hacked into my stuff

Him: nothing to worry about also your husband's trial is next week they have done enough investigation to bring him down

Me: thank you for informing me

Him: it is my pleasure. You need to rest and focus on your life for now, you have endured enough stress to last you a lifetime. Go see you parents okay

Me: thank you

The way he is being so sweet I wish I could tell him I am pregnant and that the child could be his but then I could be wrong why is this happening why is it hard to find happiness

Me: Lucky I need to tell you something

He was about to leave and he turned around looking at me

Me: thank you for everything

No I can't do this to him, I can't allow him to be a part of my life raising a rapist's kid. He is still young he can find someone his age. I just need to get rid of this thing growing inside me, there is no happiness it will bring in this world

Him: it is my pleasure

As soon as he walked out visiting hour was over and they injected me with something that made me sleep. The following day the doctor examined me further and told me I will be discharged the following day as he is pleased with my progress, my kids came to visit and it was nice spending time with them

Me: so who brought you in today?

Mpho: I borrowed your car ma and I know you wouldn't mind

I sat up and looked at them with my eyes popped right out

Naledi: iyhoo ma relax before you have a heart attack aunty Dimpho drove us here. I really hate her mother ma, she kept badmouthing you and saying awful stuff

Him: and your daughter nearly swore at her

Me: no baby don't ever do that

After the day passed I packed my things and I was really excited to get out of the hospital. Lucky picked me up and we drove to his house although I wanted to go to my house, when we got there it was the two of us

Me: where are the kids?

He kissed me shut and started roaming his hand around my body and I pushed him back

Me: stop please

Him: you mother came and took your kids and left with them, she is a none nonsense taker man I was scared for a few seconds and trust me I am not afraid of anything at all

Me: you will get used to her since you want to marry my daughter

He half smiled and picked me up putting me on the kitchen counter attempting to take off my clothes and tried to kiss me but still I couldn't allow it

Him: let's go sleep you need to rest

Me: Lucky I am sorry

He helped me down and we walked to the bedroom, we spent the whole day in doors and cuddling just talking general stuff and he brushed my tummy sending tingles down my spine. I can't have him knowing I am pregnant no this is not right. I turned to talk to him and he kissed me telling me to sleep. I managed to close my eyes and drifted to sleep.

I woke up when his alarm went off and he looked at me smiling

Him: good morning

Me: morning

He got out and went to shower while I tried to go back to sleep, I swear I heard him throw up he came back and kissed me on my forehead

Me: I will see you next week

He nodded and took his laptop with him and walked out, I got up and rushed to meet up with him

Me: are you angry? Sorry about yesterday if you are

Him: no I am not angry go well

He left and got into in the car driving away leaving me shocked I have never seen him this moody. I got dressed and fixed myself it is a habit to wake up in the morning, I got a call from a strange number and I picked it up thinking it is my debits.

Me: hello

Simon: hello Amanda can you hear me?

Me: what do you want?

Him: can you come I want to talk to you please i.....

I hung up and packed my things I packed everything in my car and I drove out to my parent's house I wanted to spend time with my children so they can know I love them dearly. I arrived and they were eating breakfast, I was so hungry I ate two or three plates and everyone was looking at me like I am crazy. I spent the remainder of the week with my children and it was fun having them around, we arrived back in time for the trial.

Naledi: mama do you think dad will get out?

Me: I don't think so but we have to wait and see

We all got dressed and went to the court room

Sherriff: all rise in court

We raised and we were told to remain in silent for the duration of the court. We sat down and I kept looking for Lucky he told me he would be here and he was not

Prosecutor: we will like to call in the first witness Ms Sindisiwe Zulu

The door opened and Sindy walked in she made eye contact with me and she smiled while I was in shock I didn't expect her to turn against Simon. She told us how he murdered her parents and they played a tape where Simon admitted everything to her, his lawyer tried to discredit the evidence but the IT expert proved it legitimacy.

Next to be called in was Lucky and my life literally froze as he entered he was even too scared to make eye contact with me, I held back my tears as he explained to the court our relationship and they played a tape where Simon pointed me with a gun and shot his father. He explained that he had my room bugged and he wanted evidence to nail him. He wasn't even scared when he was crossed examined he stuck to his guns and I couldn't hear it anymore I walked out and ran to my car just crying. My kids got in and I drove them to their boarding school because schools were resuming soon

Naledi: be strong mama talk to him okay

I nodded and they left I drove straight to his house and found him there I just walked in and sat down looking at him

Me: so was this just a game to you?

Him: no I wanted to tell you that Sindy and I were working together

Me: so it was never real?

Him: it is real babe it was real please believe me

He knelt in front of me explaining everything and looking at me with pleading eyes, Simon is the reason why Anele lost his child. Hearing everything from his mouth made me cry even more I just couldn't take it in, I walked out and drove all the way to the house of horror. I found his mother there and I ignored her and went to my bedroom. I locked the door and started crying, I played myself and now I am paying for it. The whole week at work Lucky and I were just professional nothing was said that was out of work when he did I would just ignore him and concentrate on my work. He was even starting to act mood one would swear he was pregnant. I kicked out Simon's family and I was living

alone Lizzy and I spent time together she asked me to talk to Lucky. The following day I went to work still ignoring him. I wanted to forgive him I really did

I walked out going to lunch and found him talking to one of the female colleagues and I cleared my throat it hurt me seeing them flirt like that and I was to blame

Me: excuse me this is a place for work and not to socialise

Her: sorry mam

Me: good Lucky did you do follow up on the sensory machine

Him: done and dusted

I looked at him

Me: okay

I walked to my office and slammed the door shut and cried facing down, I heard the door open and he looked at me he swung my chair so I was facing him and I felt ridiculous because of these damn hormones

Him: what is wrong?

Me: I don't know just leave me alone, you betrayed me. and you have a life you deserve someone younger than me not me. I am going to stop you from progressing in life. You don't deserve me, she is perfect for you

He wrapped his arms around me and brushed my back while I continued to sob I was not making sense at all

Me: this is so ridiculous I shouldn't be angry at you

Him: you have every right and please believe me when I say it is real what you and me have I chose you out of every girl I have laid with

Me: really not making me feel better

He chuckled causing me to smile while he took a tissue and wiped away my tears mixed with snort

Him: I feel sick

He ran to the bathroom and came back wiping himself

Me: are you okay?

Him: yes I think I need to see a doctor, I have been sensitive this past few weeks one could swear I was on my periods. Anyway you pushed me away

Me: because I think I am holding you back in life, you deserve to marry someone who isn't going through a midlife crises. I like you more than I should Lucky, I don't want to trap you in my life problems

Him: Amanda wami, please tell what is bothering you

Me: I am pregnant

I said that part lowly and he lifted my chin up

Him: say that again

Me: I am pregnant and I don't know if it is yours or my husband's

I blurted out as I begin to sob again damn these emotions

Him: is that why you have been pushing me? Manda you should know by now I wouldn't abandon you and your child which is probably mine. My sweet baby girl

Me: I don't know the sex yet

Him: I can feel it is my girl regardless of who is the father

He pulled me in an embrace

Him: if it is mine it was made right here

He pointed at the couch and I punched him

Him: we should call her couches

Me: not happening, mxm go back to Kgomotso

He smiled and kissed my forehead, he walked to the door and closed before walked back to me wearing his sexy smile, he picked me up and put me on the table kissing my neck I closed my eyes and allowed him to take over my soul something my body has been craving lately

\*CHAPTER 16\*

After the event of yesterday and him accepting my pregnancy I woke up in the morning and his legs were wrapped around mine. I tried to move and he just pinned me in and kissed my face countless of time. I just let him be

Him: mama wethu

Me: you making me old

He winked at me and I feel in love with him again damn did I just say I love him no this is too soon it can't happen just yet

Him: tell me about this tattoo

I looked at him and looked at it suddenly I had a memory of when Simon and I decided to get the tattoo

--FLASHBACK--

Simon: yeah sweet angel

I just wrapped up my class and I was going to grab lunch before going back to my room. He picked me up from behind and turned me around

Him: let's go somewhere private there are wondering eyes in here

Me: you mean Julia your girlfriend

Him: stop it that chick is just obsessed with me

We laughed as we made our way to my flat, when we got there he closed the door and immediately got down to business. We laid on my bed tired and wet from sweating

Him: baby I love you so much I get jealousy when you are with Anele, I just want to make you mine knowing that when you come back from school or work you will just end up in my arms

I sat on top of him kissing him all over

Him: I need to make my territory either with my seed or with tattoos

I thought to myself there is no way I am getting pregnant

Me: tattoos it is

He stood up and drew the tattoo for us he showed it to me

Me: wow

I sat on the table facing him

Him: I am not a graphic design lecture for nothing

Me: But why half a butterfly for me and you

Him: one will be here on my thigh and one will be here on your thigh

He lifted my leg and bit my thigh where the tattoo will be, he made me sit on top of him  
will we continued talking about the future

Him: when we are apart it shows we are half ourselves and when we are together we  
connect and become whole again

Me: that is beautiful

He kissed me

Him: you are beautiful with your dimples and your perfect life I love you and want you to  
be my wife one day

--PRESENT --

I told Lucky how the tattoo came about and he laughed while tickling me

Him: so are you keeping it

I shook my head

Me: it has lost its meaning the moment he decided to cheat and hit me, he never loved  
me did he

Him: well I don't know what went wrong but maybe he did I mean you both got tattoos

Me: yeah enough about the past by the way tomorrow we have family day so you can  
bring your kid to work

Him: are Mpho and Naledi coming

I shook my head

Me: they will be at school so no

Him: with that said

He got on top of me

Me: no we need to go to work can we do that first

We were giggling throughout mostly because he was tickling me kissing me all over

Him: okay mama wethu



He stood and went to the bathroom, I heard the water running, I stood up and he came back carrying me over his shoulder and we walked to the bathroom I was laughing throughout. We got in together and he looked at me he pushed me until my body was leaning against the glass wall he moved his hands all over my body and he went down on his knees

Him: hello baby

He kissed my still flat

Him: how would you feel going on a holiday?

I looked at him confused

Him: you would love that wouldn't you? Of course you would I mean you are daddy's little girl and I would love to take you to relax. I can't wait to meet you, hold you and play with you, I can't wait to be the best man in your life, your friend, your everything. I love you baby I don't care if I am your blood father or not I just want you to take care of mommy

I held the tears in my eyes and remembered when Simon dragged me to the bedroom, when he got on top of me humping and sweating while I lay there hopeless and emotionless. While I waited for someone to rescue me but nobody came, I just laid there used and tossed aside by my own husband in my own home with no help. I man I once said I love you, the man I exchanged my wedding vows with. I have given him everything he ever needed in his life

Him: shh don't cry honey come on

He wrapped his arms around me and I just cried

Me: you know he raped me before we slept together

Him: oh no honey

Me: I am afraid if it is his child it will be a constant reminder of that night

I kept sobbing through every word I said it made me feel weak

Him: we need to get you help

I shook my head

Me: what is the use of talking to someone, when they will be asking you questions over and over again

Him: Manda

Me: no! I will get over it, don't women get raped everyday especially in their marriages?

He just wiped the tears away and made me rest my head on his should with hand on my neck the other on my waist

Him: please don't do this

Me: it doesn't matter we getting late for work

We got out did the rest of the stuff and drove to work. We did our work in silent and at lunch time he came with food because I was too focused to check the time, there were so many emergencies and thank God I have him by my side I really would have been too swamped to function. After work Keegan came towards me he looked like he has been crying

Me: rough day?

Him: no nothing like that, I am expecting

Me: really wow wifey having baby number three?

Him: no

Me: baby three died?

Him: no you stupid, Nicole is pregnant

Me: ha Cape Town

He nodded

Him: please talk to her and tell her not to go ahead with it

How can someone ask this from another woman?

Me: huh Keegan I am not telling another grown woman what to do

Him: please I need you as a friend please

I looked at him

Me: I will have a talk with her maybe but this is not okay Keegan why am I in the middle of your things

He tried to talk but I walked away from and found Lucky waiting for me in the car and we drove home took out the meat and cooked for him. It smelled so good I started eating from the pot I couldn't stop myself.

Him: by the time the food is done I am pretty sure the pots will be empty

Me: I am sorry

I talked with my mouth full and he kept laughing, I looked at the mess I made and laughed as well. He walked over and ate from the pot as well

Him: not bad no wonder you eat this much, anyway come join me for an evening jog

I shook my head

Him: you are going to need to, think of it as a way of releasing all the emotions

Me: okay I guess but tomorrow

He nodded and went out for his jog while I continued stealing food from the pots man I need help. I called my kids checking up on them and they sounded very happy. After I was done I just threw myself on the bed and it was lights out.

....

I woke up and I was alone in bed but I was tucked in, I stood up and went to do the morning rituals got dressed and drove to work today was the stupid family day. Everyone was outside having a braai and talking with their loved one I just stood by the corner and watched everyone enjoy like I normally do for the past 7years of my life. I was about to walk back to the office when I heard Sandile, I turned around at his direction and he was running towards me

Sandile: mamatwo

I hugged him and kissed his cheek

Me: are you okay baby

Sandile: ngi right babatwo!

He called out to lucky and he came towards us, Sandile moved his hands to him

Him: no you are a man now

Me: Lucky stop it

I put him down and folded my arms looking at Lucky until he pick up Sandile

Me: was that painful, makes me wonder how you would treat your so called princess

Him: we need to go for a sonar soon, and stop spoiling him he will be out of control

Me: okay

We played with Sandile the whole day and we drove home with him, Lucky decided to take him home and I stayed to watch TV. I heard the door open and I thought it was Lucky I jumped up and walked to it only to find an intoxicated G walking in he looked at me and laughed he sat on the couch next to mine and looked at me

Him: how does he do it?

Me: who? Do what?

Him: Lucky how does he get beautiful women and I get the trash

I looked down as he said this

Him: I am going to kill whoever father that child I am raising, you know what is sad after the accident I was told I can't have kids and she came and told me honey we are having a child. She lied to me

I saw tears coming out of his eyes as he threw the bottle he was holding across the wall and I got scared

Him: I really loved that girl, I would never in a million years think she would betray me like this.

He stretched his legs on the couch and rested his head he couldn't even see where he was, I cleaned the broken glass and threw them in the bin I resumed my sitting position

Him: I can already taste the blood of the bastard that fathered that child I can already see blood coming out of their necks! I have already chopped them in my head

I closed my eyes as he said this what if he kills Lucky what if he knows he is the father? When I opened them he had passed out on the couch was this a warning that he already knows or was he just suspecting or he still has no clue who fathered his child?

Lucky came in with a smile and I just looked at him. He kissed my cheek and looked at G

Him: when did G get here?

Me: not long ago

Him: let me guess he is drunk

I nodded

Him: come let's go to bed you need to rest

Me: I think...

Him: no mama wethu you need to rest come

He picked me up and walked to the bedroom with me tucking me in bed and we cuddled. I fell asleep before I could tell him about G.

\*CHAPTER 17\*

The whole night I couldn't sleep just thinking about everything G told me, it broke my heart that some women could be cruel and allow for other men to raise their kids at the same time Lucky is to blame he shouldn't have betrayed his friend like that, now Sandile is stuck between two fathers and one of them sound very dangerous he scares me. I could lose Lucky because of a selfish act. Am I also selfish for stringing Lucky along what if I do the same thing and the child is really Simon's. I am no better than omama ka Sandile I am just selfish and stupid.

I opened my eyes when the sunrays hit my eyes I really wanted to spend the weekend on my own in my own thoughts. The smell of bacon called me from the bedroom I walked down and found Lucky drinking coffee looking into space. I tiptoed behind him and blindfolded him. He turned quickly and his expression changed the moment he saw me causing me to be scared a little

Him: I am so sorry good morning mama wethu

I just looked at him

Him: I didn't mean to scare you

I nodded

Me: good morning

Him: so mama wethu want do you want for breakfast

Me: before that I want us to talk about you friend

Him: yes eat first and we will talk about that after I am sure baby is hungry

Me: it is serious Lucky

He smiled and kissed my forehead there is no getting through to this guy

Me: since you won't listen to me, I want you to train the students next week

He shut me up with a kiss foundling with my breasts causing me to moan in his mouth and I brushed the back of his head pulling his body closer to mine

Him: can we enjoy the weekend without working

Me: I wish I need my laptop and I have three emails from QC we need to do a sensory check

I pushed him and was about to walk out

Him: mama wethu! Relax would you

He handed me a plate full of food and we handed to the lounge

G: morning everyone

He looked like shit

Him: morning you look like shit

G: I feel like shit

He sat next to me and took a bite from my plate, I moved closer to Lucky because I was afraid he noticed it and looked at me

G: I am sorry if I scared you last night

Me: it is okay

G: just know that I meant everything I said

Him: hayi muhn stop scaring her!

G: I just want revenge on whoever impregnated Thato that is all

Lucky choked on his drink while I gave the "I told you we need to talk look"

G: I need you help ntanga

Him: wh...aa..t is Sandile not yours?

G: I have been keeping this for so long I needed it out of my chest. When Thato told me she was pregnant I knew it was not mine I can't explain it to you but he is not mine I hate whoever did this to me, imagine ntanga raising another grown man's child while he is out there enjoying his life. When I find him I am going to murder him myself

Lucky held his hands on his mouth and nodded while G was talking. G left after a while and we just sat there staring at each other

Me: see this is what I wanted to tell you about

Him: we will talk about this later

He stood up taking his car keys and left me there, I decided to call my children and I won't lie it feels good to talk to my children especially Naledi it has been a while since we had a decent conversation she would always answer uhm or yeah mom but now she was opens and could even talk about boys with me. she could open up with me and all it took was me leaving that asshole.

I stood up and made food for me soon after a call came through and it was Simon again

Me: hello

Him: Amanda we need to talk

Me: can you just stop harassing me

Him: I need your help baby please don't hung up please love

His voice sounded urgent and I couldn't careless

Me: I am no longer your love nor do I love you please just let me go

Him: I we are in danger baby please!

I hung up while he was still talking why doesn't he call Sindy and call her baby now that she has shown her true colours to him he wants to come back into my life not happening. I got up put the food in the fridge and decided to go window shopping. I called Anele and we went to a restaurant and ordered food she has been distant lately more like she doesn't want me to be my friend maybe I am the one holding on to her while she has moved on. I feel like Lizzy is my only friend at this moment

Her: hey

Me: hi

Things have never been this awkward between us I don't even know what to do or where to look but she kept looking down, our order came she kept looking at her food, why did she agree to come if we just going to look sideways or look at other people

Me: anele

Her: hmm

Me: what is happening friend?

Her: what are you talking about?

Me: you have been distant and quiet, I never heard from you since I was in prison

Her: well

She took a sip from her milkshake and looked away

Me: well I miss you

Her: I know I just need space you know I need to be on my own

Me: I need to tell you something

She looked at her phone and me

Her: I am sorry friend I have to go somewhere

Me: Anele!

She just stood up and left me there while I watched her leave she didn't even leave money for the bill

Waiter: are you still okay ma'am

Me: yeah I am fine thank you

Waiter: should I take this plate away

Me: no thank you I am going to eat since I am paying. I am hungry so is my baby

I brushed my flat stomach and he smiled walking away leaving me to my thoughts, I slightly pushed my chair back and talked to my baby

Me: we don't need her do we baby? If she wants to be a part of our lives she will come on her own.

I wiped the tear from my eyes

Me: mommy is stressing you is she not? I am sorry you have to experience every pain I send you. I love you baby

After eating and paying the bill I got in my car and drove back home. On my way I saw a black car following me, my heart started beating fast call me paranoid but everywhere I go it goes. I stopped in the middle of the road and it drove off while I waited for a while, I remembered Simon's call. I drove again and the car came out of nowhere again and I hit the accelerator rushing to get home. I parked the car and rushed inside the house, Lucky's house the moment I entered I kept looking at the car to see if some got out and maybe followed me inside

Him: well this is a first

He said that and I was not expecting him, I jumped up and he caught me in his arms my whole body was shaking I thought I was going to pass out

Him: what is going on?

Me: nothing

My voice was squeaky I moved from him and he held me closer

Him: you are spooked what is going on

I shook my head, he doesn't deserve to be a part of my life. He doesn't deserve to be complicated in Simon's business

He gave me a glass of water and I was not aware the moment he gave it to me, I got spooked even more and dropped the glass again

Him: sit down and start talking



Me: I need to sleep, we will talk when I wake up

He shrugged his shoulders and went to watch TV, I was about to go to the bedroom and my shadow scared me to the point that I turned around and went to joined him. I rested my head on his shoulder while he lifted his hand and wrapped me in his half embrace. I felt pressure from him embrace I tried to move but he tightened his grip

Me: Lucky please let me go

Him: I hear you but you are going to tell me what is going on

Me: please you are hurting me

Him: start talking

I felt tears threatening to come because the pain was too much

Me: LUCKY LET ME GO!

Him: tell me now!

Me: okay ouch! You are hurting our baby

He looked at me with a serious face he wasn't even smiling, I wish I knew what he was thinking about I guess the only way out is to tell him the truth, I don't want to involve him in this what if he gets hurt?

Me: I think someone was following me back home

Him: there was that difficult

He released me and I gasped for air

Him: what car was it?

I thought hard and remembered every detail about it

Me: it was a black audi brand new I guess because the number plates where not there

Him: did you see the driver

I shook my head

Me: the windows were tinted

He brushed my face and kissed me while I tried to come my nerves down

Me: and Simon has been calling me

He tightened his jaws while he rested his head above mine

Him: what does he want?

Me: I don't know he was telling me I am in danger more like "baby we are in danger"

Him: and what else?

Me: I didn't allow him to finish so I dropped the call

He closed his eyes and looked up for a few seconds

Him: give me your phone

I gave it to him and he took out my simcard he disappeared to our bedroom and he came back and gave me my phone back

Him: when he call don't hang up okay

Me: but you just destroyed my simcard

Him: I got you another one which will be beneficiary for us

I nodded and he kissed my forehead

Him: I am going to see G I will be back, remember when he calls listen to him don't hung up before he gets to the point

I nodded as he disappeared outside the door leaving me all alone I rushed to lock the door

## \*CHAPTER 18\*

I woke up in the morning alone in bed because Lucky decided not to come back to me and his phone was off, I did my morning hygiene and made breakfast for myself, I avoided certain food because of the effects I get from them. I checked the time and I changed and wore a dress.

When I got to church everyone was looking at me and I decided to ignore them. The service went on and I was touched by some of the words our Pastor preached about. The pastor called me aside he wanted to have a few word with me

Him: how are you?

Me: I am good thanks and how are you?

Him: I am good, please sit down

We sat on the chair while people continued to eye me I pretended not to react to them

Him: well today I am here to tell you that we and the members of the congregation have decided to remove you from any activities

Me: I understand

Him: please don't take this the wrong way

Me: please I am not offended anything else?

Him: you haven't attended the counselling sessions

Me: I don't need them beside the person who wanted to fix this marriage is behind bars for the murder of his father

Him: okay

Me: thank you father Dlamini but now I need to get home I am very tired

I stood up and walked to my car, I tried to call Lucky and it went straight to voicemail. I brought the car to life and drove straight home because he was not at his house. I drove all the way there and nothing suspicious occurred on the road. I got to my house and parked the car outside sending Lucky a message before I went to my house. First thing I did was to make myself food and passed out on the couch.

I woke up when I heard rummaging sound coming outside, I opened my eyes sitting up to listen to where the sound was coming from. I was about to stand when I saw a shadow move outside the window, I backed up and bumped on the table shaking terribly. I heard a knock coming from the door and I screamed just praying that I do not die in my own house

Lizzy: Amanda it is me open up

I rushed to the door and opened for her what if the person decides to kill her while she is waiting for me, she put me in an embrace while I was shaking

Her: are you okay Amanda?

Me: yeah I am okay can I help you with anything?

Her: I saw your car and decided to come visit you

I faintly smiled at her while I kept checking outside the window

Her: what are you looking at you haven't heard anything I said

I didn't even notice I had zoned out from our conversation

Me: did you see anyone when you came here?

She gave me a weird look before she looked where I was looking, while I took a knife and walked towards the window I know I heard someone

Her: baby this is not healthy I think your mind is playing tricks on you because of the situation you just come from with your husband

Me: I am not crazy

I walked out the door and walked to where the noise was and there was no one there. I breathed out loudly and walked back inside and put the knife where it stays while she was talking with her husband on the phone after she hung up she turned her attention to me

Her: baby, Sibonelo and I think you should come and live with us

Me: no I am fine here

She looked at me worried

Me: I promise you I am, its just I can't stop the feeling that someone is following anyway have you talked to Anele?

Her: no she has been very busy lately I wonder what is up with her

Me: she doesn't talk to me also

Her: I think she has her own issues she needs to deal with, seeing she would leave your house every day in the morning while you were in prison and Sindy was not here

Me: she did what?

Her: yeah she used to sneak out every morning

I felt like my whole world was collapsing my own friend sleeping with my husband in my house and hugging me, so was her two timing me how long was she two timing me. I stood up and checked the whole place I don't even know what I was looking for.

Her: Amanda we don't know what happened please calm down

Me: I trusted her Lizzy! I really did

I threw everything out of my way and she hugged me while I loudly sobbed on her shoulder, everything is not making sense, what is happening it's like I am losing control of my life.

Her: shh it will be alright

Me: I feel so betrayed. She came to me telling me that he drugged her and raped her. And you are telling me a different story. What if the affair started way back what if they have sleeping on the same bed I have been sharing with him? What if he slept with her while we were getting married? Or while we were dating. She is supposed to be my friend

Lizzy she knows everything about me Lizzy and she is betraying me with a dog like Simon doesn't she value our friendship

I sob through every word I said, I feel so naked so vulnerable so empty so pathetic so emotional

Her: you just have to confront her to find the answers because she has all the answers to your question

I just continued crying on her shoulder and I felt pain on my stomach, I held my tummy feeling the pain. She gave me a glass of water and I took some of my pills too and stretched my whole body relaxing on the couch she came with a blanket and covered me with it

Her: I have to go are you sure you will be fine alone

I nodded and covered my whole body and face with the blanket. My friend my whole friend lying to me, telling me to give up on my marriage and move on telling me he needs to pay and whatnot but there she is opening her legs while he humps and puffs on top of him. While they both sweat, where did they do it? Probably on this very couch I am laying on? Did they do it on the kitchen counter?

I don't know how I slept or how long I have been asleep but the alarm woke me up and I did my morning ritual and wore my clothes driving straight to work. I tried calling Lucky and he still was not answering so I continued working,

The whole week went on like that, I even had to leave threatening messages to Lucky telling him I will be left with no choice but to fire him. The paranoia did not go away the feeling of being stalked was getting worse with each day. What if Lucky was killed by the person who was stalking me? What if I am next?

Keegan: are the files ready

I breathed loudly and nearly screamed when I saw him

Him: it is just me please relax, I am worried about you

Me: I am fine

I lied to him I am barely coping

Him: no you are not you need to take time off

Me: Keegan

Him: no Amanda you have been slacking off the whole week and you having been messing up, you shout at people you even let Lucky off the hook he hasn't been here the whole week and do you think I do not notice these things? You sleep during meetings

you forget some things that I ask you to do. I am forced to even give you a warning  
Amanda

I looked down while he reprimanded me

Him: I really like you but you acting strangely you need to get your act together. It is like you are on drugs may you need rehab

Me: I am sorry it won't happen again

Him: sure as hell it won't because next time I will be forced to fire you!

I nodded while he walked out, what a nice way to end my Friday. I packed everything and drove to a restaurant and bought food for me. as I was about to leave the mall I saw Anele walking round doing window shopping and everything in me snapped I tried to keep my cool but I need answers from her, she owes me the truth

Me: Anele

She turned around and quickly looked down and started feeling guilty

Me: look at me

Her: I have to go

Me: go? Go where? To see Simon? To have sex with him in prison maybe? Hmm Anele where do you have to rush to all of a sudden when you see me? Please correct me

Her: Aa..a a..manda

Me: TALK!

People started looking at us and we walked towards the door because security was moving towards us

Her: can we talk somewhere private please?

She had tears in her eyes and I shook my head paying for parking and got in my car, she followed after me in her own car I parked inside and got in the house she rushed after me and got in as well

Me: Anele

Her: listen baby it is not what you think

Me: what is it that I am thinking?

Her: that I am sleeping with your husband

Me: did you not sleep with him?

She looked away and I shook her violently before slapping her, she didn't return the slap and but she wiped her cheek

Her: I am sorry it only happened once

Me: really what about you leaving my house at early hours while I was in prison huh what about that?

Her: well I was here because...

Me: because?

Her: it is not what you think

Me: stop telling me about what I am thinking

Her: I wasn't here for Simon dammit, I was here for Sindy!

Me: I don't follow people say sindy was not here

I can't tell her it was Lizzy

Her: she was Simon usually borrowed her car and left at night and I would sneak in

Me: what are you doing with Sindy?

Her: we were having sex, there you have it that is the truth

My jaws literally dropped and I tried to talk but no words could come out

Her: I cannot look at you because I love you

My mind literally switched I thought, well I didn't think. But she has sex with guys every week how is it possible

Her: I know it may come as a shock but...

Me: don't talk please this is not true, you always have sex with random guys

Her: to get you jealous to make you come closer to me

Tears started coming through my eyes the shock was just too much I thought I knew her but it comes to show you cannot really confirm someone

Me: this is not making any sense I ...

She walked closer to me before I could react I felt her lips on mine and my eyes popped right open while I looked at her I was too shocked to react either way. The door opened and it didn't stop Amanda from continuing kissing me

Him: Amanda please don't be angry with me but I booked a hotel for us and I want to spoil you and princess for the weekend to say sorry for ditching you baby. Please forgive me

Lucky came in carrying flowers and he looked at me shocked he just dropped the flowers and his mouth was wide open and I pushed her away from me looking, I just wish the world could swallow me right now. This cannot be happening and I wonder how my baby is surviving this shock after shock experience. Speaking of baby I really need to set an appointment with the doctor this is not normal

#### \*CHAPTER 19\*

The moment I saw him come in I wanted to apologise to him and tell him it is not what he is thinking and that I am not even physically attracted to Anele but I couldn't my brain was telling me something different

Him: baby what is going on here?

I looked at him in the eyes I don't even know where I got the strength from. My emotion and hormones were raging out of control

Me: you have the audacity to ask me about what is going on here but the question I should be hearing is where the fuck have you been for the whole week

Him: I am gone the whole week and that give you a right to kiss your friends or should I say girlfriends?

Me: what? She kissed me and I even didn't know she was lesbian until a few hours ago beside you didn't pick up my calls nor did you even call to check on me or my baby if you don't want it the least you could have done was walk out. I got in trouble at work because of your ass you were busy out there living life coming back here with stupid flowers like what the hell Lucky

Her: you are pregnant?

Me: if you were a true friend this past couple of weeks you would have known but you have been a bitch and going out sleeping with my enemies. Can the both of you please do me a favour and get the fuck out of my house I need to rest

Him: I am not going anywhere

Anele rushed out with a sad expression on her face



Me: I was doing fine without you for the past three weeks so don't try this act with me just don't

He walked to me and held me in his arms

Me: Lucky let me go

He pushed picked me up and made me lay on the couch and he got on top of me and kissed me. I pushed him off, there is no way I am forgiving him this easily I forgave Simon easily and look at how that turned out

Him: I am sorry mama wethu but this is crazy

Me: crazy is me being worried sick about you and slacking off at work so don't call me crazy ever again don't you dare

He brushed the side on my face and brought his mouth closer to my ear

Him: I love it when you are feisty

I want to be so mad at him but we ended up sharing a kiss, he helped me up and we packed my bags for the weekend since he wanted to spoil me. The hotel was next to the beach. We got into the room and it was a suit

Him: we are going to be indoor for the weekend right love

I shook my head and walked to the suitcase to take out comfortable clothes, only to find out he changed my clothes and only packed my underwear

Me: Lucky!

Him: mama wethu

Me: where are my clothes?

Him: well I figured since we are staying indoor we might as well be naked for each other

Me: Lucky look you cannot just go walking around making decisions for me, I pretty much prefer my clothes mara wena you want to make life choices for me

Him: I just wanted us to have fun but since you want to be a bore

He walked towards the door

Him: stay here and be a bore

He walked out and slammed the door, good five minutes in here and now we are fighting. I don't want to fight I want him to hold me and tell me everything will be alright I want him but I fought him. I am not even making sense in my own thought dammit what is this baby doing to me, I wasn't like this with both Mpho and Naledi.

I climbed on the bed and cuddled myself up, as I was about to sleep the door opened and Lucky walked to me and cuddled me from behind we slept without saying a word to each other

Eight months passed and there was no improvement in our relationship as much as I would hate to admit it we rushed to be together we didn't even know what irritated us. I wished I had waited a bit before getting into a relationship. Oh I am due in three weeks' time and the sex of the baby was that of a girl. And I am enjoying my maternity leave although Keegan was angry at me because I forgot to talk to Nicole. Simone never called after the last time and I thought it was the last time I will hear of it.

I decided to see Lizzy and we talked through the fence and our friendship has been stronger than before and Anele disappeared again I couldn't care less about her anymore if she wants to be a part of my life she knows where to find me. After the conversation between me and Lizzy I waved her goodbye and watched her disappear into her house as I was about to walk in the house I felt something sting my neck I touched it and turned around to find the face I thought I would never see in my entire life I felt my whole world going dark in a matter of seconds

.....

I woke up to an unfamiliar environment and I looked around I was tied to the bed with my legs separate and I heard his laughter

Simon: hello my lovely wife

Swallowed hard and wanted to hit him removing the smirk from his face but I couldn't

Him: I missed you

He looked horrible like someone was beating on him in prison

Me: how did you get here?

Him: I escaped and tried to get home only to find you living with a man and when Anele told me you were pregnant I was excited I had to come and see you

Me: leave me alone

Him: no baby I read the clause to getting everything and that is to get rid of you. You have to be dead for me to inherit everything

Me: Simon please

He laughed and got on top of me

Him: not before I enjoy myself first

Me: what are you talking about?

He smiled and started kissing my neck trying move from I felt disgusted with him and he ripped my underwear off while I screamed for help

Him: SHOUT AS MUCH AS YOU WANT! Nobody is going to help you

He insert himself in and started having his way with me, I just closed my eyes since there wasn't much to do and started thinking of the all the good time I had with Simon before he became this monster. All the times I stood up for him and fought for him, all the time we raised our children together. I know the first time he raped me I didn't react much but now I felt emptier and emptier each day I was here, yes he kept me in for six days with no hero to come and rescue me nobody. I couldn't react anymore I just let him be what was the use of fighting when he has all the power when I am weak

Him: honey today is the day we finally get rid of you

I just looked at him

Me: what happened to you Simon? You used to be a good guy

He chuckled

Him: oh honey I was never a good guy. You just choose never to see the bad side I had. I am the red rapist they kept talking about in the news. Remember when we were at varsity and they nearly fired me but you stood by me. Yes? Good because I did rape all those 13 students. I did rape all those women reported to have their slits open I did raped Sindiwe at a young age remember the six year old baby yes that is why I was uncomfortable that night. I killed her parents and thought she would join in the accident but she survived, I just never thought she would be the sindy. Honey I raped Lizzy when your friendship soured and you didn't talk much remember when she never looked at me in the eyes. I stopped coming to church after that rape scandal. Damn I have been having dark fantasies of raping you every time we were together I lusted after you even when we were married I wanted you to scream and cry underneath me, I wanted you to be weak and cry and know there is no one to help you

I looked at him and everything came back to me how I always defended him like an idiot I was and I started crying

Him: I am telling you this because you going to die after giving birth tonight. I can't wait to see my boy it is a boy right

I looked at him

Him: it is mine right?

I couldn't answer him

Him: if it is a she and she is not mine I am going to raise it honey and when she reaches 18 I will deflower and make her mine. I will make her hate you so much. Imagine her mother "committed suicide" and now her father is making her his wife

Me: please

I was too emotional I couldn't even speak up properly

Him: here is the rope my love you are going to die in a way that it is believed you committed suicide

He untied me and walked out leaving me sitting on the bed, I saw his phone fell of the bedside and I opened it luckily there was no password. I called the only numbers I could remember and it was Lucky he picked up and I told him everything just that I don't know where I was. After a while he came back and I placed the phone where I got it and laid on the bed.

Him: I am sorry Amanda I know I have been harsh on you these passed couple of days please forgive me my love

I just looked at him confused

Him: here drink this it will help you

I looked at the drink and shook my stubborn head

He pulled me to him and shoved it down my throat choking in me process. After he was done I sat down looking at him. After a while I felt little pains on my abdomen and he just laughed

Him: it feels natural right?

Me: what did you do to me and my baby?

Him: I got this mixture from a herbalist now we have a few hours before the baby is born

I felt some of the worst cramp ever and the contractions where bad

Him: lay down baby let that child out my baby

I felt my muscles tensing up and opening as the baby started pushing it's way down my cervix. He laid me on my back and separated my legs

Him: relax it is almost here

I heard police sirens outside as I pushed the baby, they opened and took him in. the paramedics came in and Lucky rushed to be by my side and helped me push the baby out. I was rushed in the hospital and they checked us both and told me everything is fine the police conducted a rape kit and I was given drugs for infection. After two days my

Lawyer managed to push the day fast and I was divorced from Simon I won everything. I was very distant with Lucky and my nightmares got the better of me. I called Keegan and asked him to transfer me to Pretoria because I couldn't cope anymore I am done with KwaZulu Natal my time is done here I can no longer live here but this meant breaking Lucky's heart but hope he can forgive me

Me: Lucky I will allow you to see Mpilo but I need to go I just can't I can't do this. There is nothing left for me here but pain and misery I am not happy you are not happy, you deserve someone who will love you who will grow old with you yes everyone has a baggage but I have too much baggage and pain and I am pulling you back. Thank you everything

I kissed him and walked out packing all my luggage in the car while he cried and I hugged him and kissed him one last time. I walked out and got in my car, Lizzy came running to me and we hugged and I said my goodbye. I drove all the way to Pretoria crying leaving behind my past my tears my pain I needed closure and I have found closure. As soon as I got there I found a house I bought online and everything was as it seems. I settled in with Mpilo. Mpho and Naledi were coming tomorrow I made a transfer for them and they were more than happy to live with me. I decided to book a therapy session for tomorrow as well to cope with everything that has occurred in my life. I slept with my baby the night and she woke up hungry in odd hours.

For six months I stayed with all my children and I must say it has been nice living with them with them and therapy has helped them all lot including me I think well I believe. I woke up and drove my children to school leaving Mpilo with a maid and I drove to my therapist feeling anxious as always as soon as I got in we talked a bit and he was a very nice person

Him: so are I want to try something different with you today, see the empty couch next to you I want you to pretend it is you as a bossy person and how you would have handled everything as sort of a role play

I did as said

Bossy me: why did you allow him in your life, why did you let him rape you and take power over you. You are weak and pathetic and stupid

Whinny me: I am not stupid I was blinded by love I loved him and didn't want to believe all those rumours about him I loved him with all his faults and he took everything from me

I couldn't continue before breaking down and crying again. The therapist put a teddy and asked me to pretend that it was Simon. I lost it looking at it and started punching it and I felt tears coming down and I couldn't stop myself. I continued letting everything out, I couldn't even feel anything either than my pain it hurts, when you find out your whole life

is a lie it hurts. I couldn't even breathe properly I was just broken just sad. My therapist left me there giving me space. I took the tissues he offered me.

When he came back he asked how I was doing and I told him I am fine and everything will work out. I walked out feeling a bit better and drove home to fetch my daughter I went shopping to buy her new clothes I was talking to her and she was blabbing and I kept making baby talks with her. I accidentally bumped into a guy by mistake

Him: watch where you are going!

Me: I am sorry it was an accident

He walked away from me wearing a grey suit and I continued to shop with my daughter, when I reached the car I tried to put her in the car and she was clinging on to me

Me: baby please allow mommy to pack the stuff while you wait here, do we have a deal baby

I tried again and she was not having it, I sighed in defeat and struggled with the first load and the rude guy walked towards me

Him: hey allow me to help you as a peace sign I am sorry for earlier

Me: no thank you I got this

Him: you haven't gotten anything your baby is winning this, I am pretty sure I could have robbed you by now

Me: excuse me mister

Him: you are excused and my name is Kenneth Swanepoel

He smiled revealing his cute dimples for a moment I was weak I am pretty sure I was drooling before I snapped out of it

Me: okay now can you excuse me Mr Swanepoel

Even though I protested he packed my stuff in. I got in my car and he looked at me smiling

Him: drive safe

Me: whatever also you are creepy

He smiled and I went to fetch my children from school I cannot move from relationship to relationship

\*CHAPTER 20\*

When we got home Mpho and Naledi helped me unpack and Mpilo was tired from playing and being pushed around by me. I helped them do their homework while I caught up with work. At dinner time we sat together with mama Zoe she was part of the family

Me: how was school?

Naledi: School was school mom you know today...

I really wanted to hear what she was saying but my mind shifted to the perfect stranger I met today the way he looked, the way his grey suit was tight fit, man I could run my fingers up and down his body. I could kiss him and end up married, why am I thinking about him?

Naledi: mama are you even listening to us

Me: hmm

I looked at her I could see her lips moving but I couldn't hear her I was still picturing that good gentleman

Naledi: mama!

Me: I am sorry baby

Her voice suddenly snapped me out of my perfect dream

Her: mama who is he?

Me: who is who?

Her: mama I am a teenager I know these things

Me: Naledi who is the adult between me and you

I heard mama Zoe laughing and we looked at each other just smiling

Her: mama vele ubhuti Lucky is no longer part of our picture

I looked at her and my heart nearly shattered at the name of Lucky flashbacks quickly flooded my mind how I would rest on his arms and we would just talk about silly things and have a few laughs I miss how he would make me feel better and would make me laugh I miss my Lucky there I said it. But I do hope he finds someone who will love him and appreciate him for being himself.

Her: Mama!

Me: sorry

Her: heey

Mpho: mama are you okay

I looked at him and smiled

Me: yeah I am alright

Him: I am tired I am going to bed we will talk to you tomorrow neh mama

We hugged and he went to sleep leaving me with Naledi

I went into my room and found my child playing alone and I fed her and put her next to me we played a bit before we both dozed off at 22h00. I woke up early in the morning and bathed my small child and drove Mpho and Naledi to school, as usual I drove to the therapist and the session went on after I was done I drove to a restaurant for lunch and I waited for my take-away order to come

Him: hi

I turned around quickly and looked at him

Me: are you stalking me?

He chuckled like I was a crazy person

Him: come sit with me

Me: no thank you

Him: Nancy please hold whatever she ordered and bring in today's special

Me: ms please don't do that I will wait for my order

Him: I pay your salary so you will do like wise

Me: I will have my take-away thank you

Him: right this way Ms, it is funny how I never got your name

Me: my name is not important

He chuckled

Him: are you this cheeky

Me: no but someone needs to safe guard their heart

Him: looks like you have been through a lot

Me: we have not reached a state where we can share my personal details

I sarcastically smiled at him and reluctantly joined him at the table he showed me to sit at



Him: okay lets do this what is your name?

Me: Amanda tempted to say Tshetlo but am divorced now so Amanda Ndzimande

He smiled

Him: there ms Ammy

Me: look here Mr Kenneth

Him: Kenneth is my father please call me jr or Kenny

Me: jr

Him: no I prefer Kenny

I sighed in defeat

Me: Kenny

Him: good now we are on second base calling each other with nicknames

I wanted to talk but words failed me dismally

Me: are you not married Kenny?

Him: hmm third base already making your territory

I closed my eyes and looked away holding it in the laughter

Him: well I did have a girlfriend and we broke up for well couple of reasons so are you ready to share your story

I shook my head and every emotion I had in me came back and I couldn't hold back the tears from falling. I didn't even realise I was crying until he was pulling me in for a hug and he brushed my back. Everything hit me the fact that I left Lucky and he can't see the daughter he was so willing to see and be with. I wiped my tears and looked at him smiling.

Me: thank you, you are very kind

Him: yeah

His phone rang and he excused himself

Him: Chace what's up? You need files....

I couldn't hear the rest before they brought the special and my take away. He signalled for me not to leave before he disappeared

\*LUCKY\*

I have never been this shattered by a woman in my entire life, yes I have to admit I have failed her over and over again. I have been there for her through the rough patches in her life, I have tried to be the friend she need and she still left me on my own she took everything she took my child she left me to start over again. I couldn't control myself no matter how much I tried it hurts

Mandla: cuz you are killing him!

I kept throwing the punches on his stupid face before I took a knife and castrated him I took pleasure in hearing him scream my name I took pleasure in seeing his blood being spilled it is nothing to want he did to my daughter, yes I know that she is mine because while she was in the hospital I took the dna tests behind Amanda's back

G: bruh I know you are angry but we need him alive in order to teach him a lesson

Mandla: it is cool Dr Sidana will help him

Me; he is you psychologist

Mandla: psychiatrist he did medicine first beside he needs our money and wena I need you out of this lifestyle

I heard them talk but what I was thinking about was how hopeless Amanda felt how she seemed lost when she was in my arms and she wouldn't even allow me to touch her. I saw myself running my fingers up and down her skin she was so perfect her skin was silk smooth I loved her. My mama wethu the perfect woman I don't care how old she is from me she completed me for a few seconds and this fucker took everything from me.

The fact that another man could be comforting her now, raising my daughter and making love to her. I am losing her. Actually I have lost her I don't even know if I am getting her back she is gone for good

Mandla: mzala where are you going? Lucky?!

I left them there and headed to a bar ordering as many drinks as possible. I kept filling the table and getting drunk minute but minute. Everything was moving fast. I kept getting lost in my emotions every lady I saw resembled mama wethu

Woman: hey handsome want to hang out

I wanted to say no but she looked like Amanda, I couldn't stop it I love her I want her next to me maybe she could be my next Amanda maybe she could fill this empty void in my heart. I gave her my car keys and she drove me to my house when we got there she took out a stash of coke and we smoked it getting high and high until I couldn't think. I remember picking her up and throwing her on the bed I remember putting on the condom and I remember her scratching my back screaming my name. I remember her looking like Amanda my beautiful Amanda

I opened my eyes when the sunlight hit my eyes the headache was too much and I couldn't handle it I looked to my side and a woman was laying there naked. I got up and brushed my teeth when I returned she was still sleeping and I shook her up and threw her clothes to her before calling a taxi for her

Her: don't you want us to do a morning round?

She was smiling and the taxi alerted me they were here

Me: your ride is here

I showed her to the door and she left with a pissed look on her face I couldn't care less. Who was she? She is not Amanda nor does she conduct herself like my lady at all. I made breakfast for myself and G got in looking at me

Him: so you scored last night?

Me: she was here to pass time

Him: I hope you used protection

Me: you know me, I am sorry I overreacted last night with the whole Simon situation

Him: you nearly killed him bruh your brother cuz had to work fast against time to save him, I don't want you to be arrested for murdering that bastard at all

Me: yeah I will learn to control my emotion

We chilled the whole morning although he is the best friend I could ever ask for I can get over the fact that I fathered his son with the woman he loves. We have been going around in circles looking for a ghost chasing well me the father of Sandile. I haven't seen much of my boy since this whole Amanda saga

Him: what you thinking about

Me: we should throw a party tonight

Him: you have work tomorrow

Me: yeah put we can have pussy everyday

Him: yeah I guess let's do this let's forget our problems for one night

While talking I received a text from Amanda my heart skipped a beat and I looked at it, it was a picture of my daughter I closed my eyes and brought it closer to my mouth. My princess is growing up without me. G took the phone and looked at the picture

Him: wow she literally is a split version of you she is so adorable, almost like my Sandile

When he said that I froze and looked at him

Me: what do you mean when you say that?

Him: I am just pointing out unless you have something to hide

Me: I have nothing to hide

Him: than why are you so jumpy

I continued staring at him and he smiled

Him: relax bro I know you would never in a million years do that to me I trust you. But your daughter damn she is going to give you a tough time with them boys

I sipped my coffee

Me: I will fight them off

Him: maybe she and Sandile should get married don't you think

I choked on my drink looking at him

Him: relax I am pulling your leg, but think about it.

Yeah I am thinking about it and this is not right it is not okay

## CHAPTER 21\*

### \*AMANDA\*

I was looking into his eyes falling deeply in love with this man the way he smiles, his voice and the muscles. His tallness the way he smells, the way he argh stop it. I turned to walk away He moved closer to me nibbling my ear from the back and he whispered "are you afraid" I shook my head feeling confident and he picked me up dropping me on the bed, his hungry eyes roaming my whole body making feel so alive he sat on top of bed and kissed my hand all the way to my shoulder, he moved up and slowly took off my clothes trailing his kisses all over my body trailing my fingers as well.

Everything sent chills down my body making me smile. Feeling completely naked and exposed he got down on my legs and he lifted on leg and started kissing it all the way down to my thighs he was moving closer and closer to my sacred passage it tickled making me giggle and gasp at the same time. I could feel his hot breath brushing against

my skin he locked his hand with mine. My breathing was uneven I closed my eyes waiting for the sensation, my heart beating in anticipation my whole body going on a frenzy. He was getting closer and closer

Me: ahh..

I could feel the excitement until I heard Mpilo crying. I opened my eyes in frustration wishing to go back to my dream. My poor baby was pink from crying and I picked her up and started feeding her brushing her little head. I checked the time it was 3:30 am. While feeding her my mind shifted to what happened earlier, after his phone call he came back to join me and we just had a light conversation over lunch he never even brought up my crying nor did he question me over and over again about my past. He made me feel alive again he was the best company I have had since coming here to Pretoria. Man he was the only company I had since the moving here either than Mama Zoe well she needed the pay nothing more nothing less.

The way we connected it reminded me of Lucky and how much injustice I have done to him and I decided to send a picture of Mpilo to him in the morning when she is awake and he is awake as well. After feeding her she drifted to sleep on her own this baby is testing me really she should have stop this waking up in the morning by now. I put her next to me and I slowly drifted back to sleep.

My alarm woke me up in the morning and I woke up bathing Mpilo and feeding her before handing her to mama Zoe and I did my morning rituals, I found Mpho and Naledi eating breakfast I joined them and drove them to school. Today I am starting at the new company and the boss was already fed up with me and my leaves. Work was not that bad considering I had to meet new people and get to know the systems from scratch. At noon I drove to my psychologist I sat there looking at him

Him: good day Amanda

Me: hello

Him: today you look different

Me: I feel different like a new person

Him: I can clearly see that you even glowing

Me: I feel like everything is going good

Him: would you care to elaborate?

Me: well today morning after bathing Mpilo I dressed her up in a very cute outfit, and I sent Lucky a picture of her. And I found a new guy

I said the last part more like a whisper

Him: so did Lucky reply to your message?

Me: I don't know if he got it or what but I think he did

Him: how does it make you feel?

I shrug my shoulders

Him: so tell me more about this new guy

I told him how we met and everything that has occurred

Him: so you are attracted to this guy?

Me: I don't know but might as well be right I mean the dream

Him: what if he is another version of Simon?

Me: he is not

Him: how sure are you?

We kept quiet looking at each other I have to admit what if he is right and this guy is not who I think he is. Can I trust him the way I trusted Lucky. Why do I have to compare him to Lucky?

Him: have you dealt with your feeling for Lucky?

I closed my eyes and pictured Lucky the all so perfect man who was there for me while do I feel like he was a rebound no he was not he was more than that he was my comforter I needed him then

Him: okay let's just say hypothetically speaking there was an accident and you have to choose who to save between your new guy and Lucky who would you choose?

I looked at him

Me: do I really have to choose?

He nodded and I looked down I couldn't choose what if I choose Lucky and the reason I choose to leave him lingers in my mind again and I leave. And this new guy whom I have only met recently what if he is not what I thought him to be and he turns out to be a monster and what if he only sees me as a friend and nothing more making me a fool.

Me: can I go home and think of the choices I have?

Him: well was a short session

Me: that is because I am back at work and I am loving it, but sad thing is leaving Mpilo she is waking up at night again it started last week and I think it is because she is aware I am leaving her for work

Him: she is a baby

Me: she needs to grow with her stages

Him: and she will you don't have to rush her

I nodded and said goodbye to him and drove straight home I have found transport for my kids.

Me: hello

They greeted me back

Me: how was school?

Mpho: it was boring as hell mama

Naledi: mama he and his friend are bullying people

Him: no I was not

Her: you made Jessica cry. It was not nice of you

Him: she wants me to be her boyfriend do you want her as a sister in law

She shrugged

Her: err... actually no

Him: so I told her I am not interested in washed up pu... people

Me: you guys are so mean you need to change your attitudes and the way you speak around me

They looked at me and smiled

Me: I am not joking

Them: we were just pulling your leg mom we would never hurt a fly

Him: I am still your perfect boy mama and Mpilo is still your favourite girl

Her: oh so I am not loved according to you Mpho?

She pushed him and he got angry and chased her around

Me: be careful please

She hid behind me and they played involving me, I looked down and just smiled at these crazy kids of mine we ended up making a mess in the lounge much to mama Zoe's anger she doesn't want us to ruin her things

Mama Zoe: here is Mpilo

She looked very angry while tidying up

Me: thank you mama

I picked her up and looked at her

Me: baby when you are old please do not act like these two okay my baby. I want you to be sweet. Yes you should be sweet

She was laughing while I was talking to her. The kids received sms's and seemed like they received sad news because they became upset

Me: what is happening?

Her: mama it is dad

She spoke through her sobs and I cringed at the sound of that name

Him: mama I know hearing his name is not ideal for you and you are trying to forget him. And we are trying to pretend he does not exist but apparently he put us as his emergency contacts and he was brought in Joburg hospital he was in an accident

Me: why the heck would he do that you still too young?

Her: mama can we please go now

Me: but...

Her: please mama please

I reluctantly agreed and we drove to the hospital. Luckily it was still visiting hours so they went in to see him. A police officer was waiting outside his room. They came out looking like they saw a ghost. I decided to go in and see him when I got there he was cuffed to the bed and he looked like someone has hurt him badly

Him: Amanda

He spoke weakly it made me sick the way he called my name

Me: Simon what happened?

He looked away, and I knew that pain very well the pain of feeling powerless and pathetic having someone determine your destination

Me: it hurts doesn't it? Losing everything you have worked hard for right? It hurts feeling powerless right? It hurts being hit on right? Good because I have been feeling like this and have been wrong so many times by you! I have cried and you have taken everything from me! You are a monster! I hate you Simon I really do! You are pathetic

The last part I felt my sobs choking me and I gasped a bit for air



Him: than why are you here next to me? You still love me Amanda

Me: I am here because you know how to manipulate your kids I don't love you Simon I fucken hate I just came in to tell you are nothing to me!

I slapped him on his face twice releasing the energy of hate I have for him

Me: I hope it hurts I hope you die

I turned to walk and he held my hand shaking it brought back all the negative emotions

Him: your boyfriend castrated me Amanda I am without a penis. I need you honey

He was crying and I forcefully removed his hand from me

Me: I don't care. Do you know how much I loved you? I would have done anything for you! I trusted you and you broke me Simon you changed me and made someone I am not. You don't need me Simone you never did and seeing you now just made me realise how pathetic you are you don't deserve me at all, thank you for the beautiful kids you have given me but that is the only connection we share from now on your kids that is all I am done I am removing you from my heart

I walked out crying and a doctor came to me

Him: hey are you okay?

I couldn't contain it I just cried while he comforted me and I cried on his shoulder. My kids came to me and hugged me

Him: don't worry he will be alright

Me: I hope he dies

Her: mama

Him: you don't mean that miss

Me: oh but I do he has taken everything from me, he raped me and I felt useless. He doesn't deserve my sympathy

Nurse: doctor van Zyl you are needed now

He stood up and he left us there. I looked at my children and realise how much I hurt them with my comments and hated myself for that

Me: I am sorry babies lets go home

We drove home in silent and I parked the car. They didn't even eat supper they went straight to their bedrooms. I went to their bedroom and I had a little prep talk with them. They forgave me for my comments about their father and I told them I will see them in

the morning. I went to my room and said a little prayer. Asking God to forgive me for the sins I have made and the pain I cause to people I love I asked him to guide me in my life and in my decision to help me see the light at the end of the of this dark tunnel I find myself in. I feel lost and I need him to guide me I need him to be there for me and my family. After the prayer I called my mother and she answered immediately and I told her about Simon

Her: did you at least punch him in his none existent penis

Me: mama!

Her: he needs to feel the pain

Me: I think being castrated is enough pain

Her: no it is not he deserves more than that tomorrow go there and punch him remind him he is nothing now without his penis... hehehehe now he is going to be the perfect wife in prison

Trust my mom to turn this into a joke

Me: ai mama I wonder how dad copes with you

Her: he loved me like this

We talked a bit and my father took over we talked as well I made sure I didn't tell them about Kenny. It felt good talking to my parents, after our goodbyes I slept with my baby next to me I kissed her face countless of times and closed my eyes

## CHAPTER 22\*

### \*KENNY\*

The day I found my girlfriend cheating on me it broke me we have been together for years we went through shit together. I thought we would grow old together but she showed me that love is overrated. I never thought I would cry in my life I want to kill her I could feel myself strangling the life out of her but I stopped myself thinking of the our child. I didn't want him to grow up hating me so I let her be. I spent months locked in my house drinking and letting life go on. Life was shit I never knew hurt like that. My friends would check on me from time to time but I would switch off my phone and I didn't want to be associated with anything outside the wall of my house.

But the day I walked out I bumped into this gorgeous woman with her child in her trolley. My hate for women was still too deep I couldn't contain it and I busted out at her and scared her little angel, I decided to walk away before I could react further. I stopped and like a stupid creep I followed her all the way to her car, and decided to help her as peace offering. I can't even explain what drew me to her I have seen many gorgeous women, but none had this effect on me like this woman.

When she came to my restaurant I knew I had to talk to her and get to know her. when she cried on my shoulder I couldn't help it but fall more and more for her although she didn't tell me exactly what her problem but I noticed it seems like she was carrying the worlds problems on her shoulders she. I decided to just have a friendly light conversation with her telling her this and that just to see her smile and damn it was priceless she fulfilled the void in my heart

Chace: hey man

I looked up and he was walking with Mal as usual

Me: the couple is here

The looked at each other and shrugged it off

Him: I have a wife thank you

Mal: and I also have a wife who respects me

Chace and I laughed at him

Me: dude your wife is definitely wearing the pants in your marriage

Mal: don't talk about her like that

Me: I am sorry but she does not respect you

Chace: yeah most def doesn't mine respects me though

Me: yeah your wife has seen shit, and you Mal your wife is shit. She is crazy well you crazy and you just blend each other anyway where is Arthur?

Chace: he is married to our hospital

Mal: nobody is going to ask about ....

Chace and I: no we don't want Freddie here please

Chace: man it is good to see you out and glowing like a new bride

Me: I am not glowing and I am glad I went out. I found a woman

They both looked at me

Me: she perfect you guys, she is beautiful and she completes me. I stopped believing in love and now I don't know, it's like I want to make her my wife

Mal: I never thought I would here the M word coming out of you, I mean Ntombizodwa has always wanted you to marry her and you would get cold feet

Me: I guess she wasn't the one plus I am growing old reaching old age soon about to die  
They chuckled

Me: it is not a joke I can almost see the grey hair popping out look at it

Chace: no thank you. Anyway does she know about you

Me: this is normal right? "hi girl I know we just met you gorgeous and all, by the way this restaurant is just a face front and deep down I am an international criminal who is an excellent hacker and can delete my files anywhere so they cannot trace me and my friend. We run very good syndicates and can steal your diamonds in two seconds" do you think she is going to stay with me

They both looked at me with wide open jaws

Me: and you Chace I bet you hesitated to tell your wife about your activities outside being a doctor

Chace: well

Me: thank you. You didn't tell her on the first date right, man just hope she feels the way I feel for her she makes my world go round and I wouldn't replace her with anyone. I think I LOVE HER

We all sat there talking but really my mind was on this beautiful creature that has me captured I want to feel her so badly what is wrong with me.

\*AMANDA\*

The whole night I couldn't sleep I kept tossing and turning, I knew somehow my children were traumatised and I got up and went to their bedroom, I heard Naledi sniffing and I gently shook, she turned and looked at me and I embraced her rocking her back and forth she just cried on my shoulder Mpho turned and looked at us he was trying to be strong but I know he was also breaking deep down. I brushed her hair and Mpho joined me in hushing his sister up we didn't say much. I mean that man knows how to suck out the joy from my family, he know how to hurt his kids were it hurts the mostly and he doesn't care how it affects them at all.

Naledi: mama will he be okay?

Me: he has to be baby

Him: mom frankly we were doing fine without him and now look we are grieving for a man who doesn't care about us

Me: baby he is your father

Him: he is my sperm donor and he won't get any sympathy from me

Her: Mpho he is still dad

Him: maybe you dad but not mine, I won't allow him to hurt you like this nor let him break my family anymore. This has to stop from now on I won't be his emergency contact he is a rapist and a murderer he deserves nothing from me Naledi save your tears baby girl we won't be crying for a bastard

Me: BABY!

Him: mama no you too soft that is your problem you can't even see when people are taking advantage of you so please allow me to handle this as a man of the family go sleep don't worry about us, you look tired you haven't gotten enough rest since the whole saga

I looked at him amazed

Him: why are you still here go I can handle her

I stood up and left them, I tried to sleep but I couldn't I could still picture him telling me he doesn't have a penis. I tried to close my eyes but I couldn't. At 5am I took Mpilo to Mme Zoe and knocked on the kids door

Me: I am going for a jog when I come back I want you all to be dressed and prepared okay

They nodded. I walked to my room and took out my gym clothes, I wanted to forget everything that was running in my mind. I brushed my teeth and put on music on my phone. I took water and a towel and went out it was still dark, I put my earphones on and started jogging. Everything started playing on my head everything all my emotions it was like someone switched an on button I just kept running and running just wishing my life could change, that for once I could find happiness, I could be excited and enjoy being with my children.

I didn't realise I was increasing my speed as I was trying to deal all the emotions in me and I felt a sharp pain on my ankle I groaned in frustration wishing the pain away. I tried to walk and I nearly fell I felt strong arms hold me, I quickly removed my earphones to see and hear who it was

Man: I am sorry you nearly hurt yourself

Me: I have a little pain on my ankle

Him: do you live around here?

I nodded as I tried to get up and he kept holding me down

Me: can I just get up please

Him: yeah I am sorry

He helped me up and with me limped all the way home. When I got there both my kids were not ready for school and I took an ice –pack and put it on my ankle

Me: why are we not ready for school?

Her: I couldn't mom I am tired

Me: wena?

Him: mama I don't want to leave you alone

He took my leg in his hand and massaged me while Naledi brought me tea to drink I thanked her and kissed her forehead

Me: green tea a woman after my heart

After doing a few morning rituals I limped to my car and drove to work. I buried myself in work and after I was done my children called me and Naledi wanted me to see her father I had no choice no matter how tired I was I drove her with my limping leg. I swear the pain was unbearable I had to hid the tears and be strong for my children, well Mpho point blankly refused to go with us. I waited for her at the waiting area and the doctor from yesterday walked past and he saw me sitting there and joined me

Him: hey

I looked at him and greeted him

Him: why are you here is it to see the man who raped you

Me: that man is the father of my children and ex-husband so my babies want to see her

Him: oh I am sorry about that

I looked at him and his jaws were tightened and frightening

Me: are you okay

He nodded and looked at me

Him: I am sorry you went through that with your husband some men are bastards and deserve to be punished

I nodded and he stood up and left I felt scared for a moment. My daughter came back after an hour and she looked at me angry. We drove home in silence I was even afraid to ask what was going on. We parked she jumped out and I followed limping.

Him: mom did you go in?

Her: why would she?

We both looked at Naledi

Her: dad told me everything

Me: what are you talking about?

Her: he told me that it was Lucky who did this to him!

Me: Naledi!

Her: no mama you and your boyfriend planned this didn't you? So you can both raise that little thing! You framed dad and had it look like it was him right mama?

Him: weren't you the one who said you don't believe dad? Weren't you the one who called dad a monster? Now he sells you dreams and all of a sudden you side with him, come on Naledi he did this to himself even if Lucky did this to him, he deserves it! He never wants to see mom happy

She huffed and walked to her room slamming the door I look at Mpho and he threw himself in my arms

Me: you believe me baby?

Him: mom I have lived with you longer than she, because she loved going to your mom's I have seen the hate he had toward you and the pain he has caused you. You know what is sad? Women are quick to judge other women and pit each other down, you should be standing together fighting men like my dad, instead of pointing each other with words. She heard whatever dad said to her and she is in pain she is stupid. I know the love you have for us mama it is deep and you will never change for anyone

Tears rolled out of my eyes as he spoke his speech

Him: mama I know you love us more than dad you were there for us more than he was

He hugged me

Him: one day she will see it for herself and wake up but I hope it won't be too late. And really from the pain you suffered from, I told you that you deserve happiness my mommy, you deserve to smile and be blessed and really Mpilo is a blessing to us. And when I said have fun I didn't mean a baby though and you had to have way too much fun creating one

Me: I am still your mother

And he remain in my arms while we talked, we looked at Naledi when we heard her sniffing and she walked away from us crying. I wanted to go to her and Mpho dragged me down

Him: let her deal with it mama she needs to start thinking like a grown up

Me: what have you done to my sweet Mpho?

Him: he is growing and learning life is not what it seems and we should respect each other. Eat supper I already ate with Mama Zoe and I saved some of you and your ungrateful brat Mpilo is sleeping with Mama Zoe you deserve some peace

He kissed my forehead gave me my food and walked to their bedroom. My son is a man now

### \*CHAPTER 23\*

Nothing beats waking up on a Saturday morning knowing you won't be have work stress and issues just wish I can say I was well rested, I woke up with a heavy headache I only managed to sleep for two hours. But now I have to face Naledi man I don't have the energy to fight her, I walked out of my bed and limped to the bathroom did my morning ritual and did some finishing touches. I limped to the kitchen to make breakfast and found my son was cooking breakfast

Him: mom

Me: good morning sweetheart

We shared a huge while and he dished up for me

Him: did you sleep?

Me: yeah I did

Him: but you have to rest the doctor's order

He winked to me and I really appreciate this little man of mine. I took out my phone I really wanted to have a conversation with my friends just to off load on someone who isn't my therapist so I called Lizzy and she answered but you could clearly hear that she and her husband were having an early exercise in the morning. I hung up and somehow



found myself calling Lucky I don't even know why, it rang and he didn't answer so I hung up and I sat down Zoe handed me my baby and I played with her a little until I remembered the guy I bumped into. It is funny I don't even have his numbers, it's Kenny or K'something. Oh yeah Kenneth Kenny. I got up and called Mpho informing him I am going out a bit.

Him: okay just be careful mom

I hugged him and drove to the restaurant I think he owns. While driving Naledi's words echoed in my head I never knew how it upset me and I became emotional I sat behind my wheel just crying and letting it all out why is he using his kids like this? He is weak know what Amanda don't cry baby girl he has already lost. Dammit Lucky why did he have to hurt him I know he deserves it but now he has ammo on my kids I hate this. Amanda you are strong he lost he has nothing more left to lose, dammit I have a lot to lose. No I won't let him get to me, this is why I need a friend someone who will support me, just hope this guy won't let me down. You can do this come on. I got there and found Nancy the lady that served me the other day

Me: hey miss

Her: hey would you like to order something?

Me: I was wondering if your boss is here

Another woman came to me she looked angry for some reason

Her: what do you want with him?

Me: oh I just wanted to talk to him

Her: he doesn't want to talk to you I mean look at you with red eyes probably smoking weed and the limping with the bandage wearing slippers girl do yourself a favour and go

I looked at her while she showed me the entrance

Me: look I don't want to fight you I just want to talk to him

Her: JUST GET THE FUCK OUT!

Everyone was looking at us and I raised my hands in surrender mood, I turned and was about to limp out when I bumped into a guy's chest and he lifted my head up

Her: KENNY WHAT ARE YOU DOING!

Him: Ntombizodwa I don't want to fight you, you are not going to act like a cheap tramp in my face I told you we done, please respect the fact that you are the mother of my child I don't want him to grow up knowing his mother is an embarrassment. I have respect for

you, but I will not tolerate this behaviour nor will I allow you to disrespect my customers so leave. You and I only share a child

I felt his words stabbing me as well, I saw tears form in her eyes she doesn't deserve that

Her: does she know what you do for a living?

Him: LEAVE!

I jumped up a little at the command in his voice and she turned to leave

Him: Ammy are you okay?

He tone changed to be soft and warm and his muscles started relaxing a bit

Me: I think I should leave

I turned quickly hurting my ankle further and I almost fell when he caught me and pulled me to him and picked me up walking to his office

Me: can you put me down I can walk

He ignored me until we finally arrived and he got in putting me on his couch and he took off my bandage, he walked to a drawer and came back with an ointment and massaged my foot

Him: did you have this checked out?

Me: uhm Kenny can I just go I don't want to ruin your relationship I know how it feels having someone ruin a perfect relationship for someone

Him: we broke up a long time ago. She is the one who brought another man in the relationship. You know what hurts loving someone so much and they don't reciprocate that love making you look like a fool. You thinking you will be in old age together and then all of a sudden everything Changes you lose everything in a blink of an eye. You sit there wondering have I been a fool all my life do I even know what love is. Did they even love me?

I knew exactly how he felt, it humiliating and heart breaking

Him: hey stop crying

He wiped the tears and I felt my breath restricting and I was becoming weak I couldn't breathe I kept having the fear that I could die what about who will take care of them if I die what will happen.

Him: breathe in and out come on

He stood up and fetched a glass of water from his desk, I took it shaking and choking in my own tears after a while I became calm and managed to breath

Him: you were having a panic attack

Me: I need to go home

He forced me in an embrace

Him: you are not going anywhere like this start talking

I closed my eyes listening to his heartbeat and I started telling him everything, after I was done he lifted my face up and brushed the tears with his thumbs and planted a kiss, I so wanted to do this I so wanted him to make me feel like a woman and show me the kind of love I deserve. He pulled back and looked at me

Me: I am sorry we shared a salty kiss because of my tears and snort

He chuckled

Him: is that all you are worried about?

I smiled and pulled him in for another kiss and he broke it again

Me: please

I begged him, I don't even know why I was feeling like this why I wanted him inside me so bad. I wanted him to touch me and tell me I look beautiful, make me feel beautiful and shown that I am more than this

Him: Ammy this is not right, sex is not the answer I know you are hurting and want me to make you feel like a woman but after a few minutes of sweating and screaming, scratches and bites you will not feel better. In fact you might even feel worse

I felt embarrassed and looked away and he tilted my head again

Me: I should go

He shook his head

Him: when was the last time you had a decent night rest

Me: last night

Him: you look like you last saw sleep last year

He stood up and went to his drawer and took out pills and handed them to me

Him: drink up

Me: what are these

He sat next to me and made sure I drank them

Him: it's sleeping pills

Me: and you tell me now what are you a doctor

He laughed

Him: no my friends are doctors I am more into I.T

He put his arms around me and rocked me back and forth resting his head on my head I felt my eyes getting heavier and heavier last I remember was him kissing my forehead and he watched me drift to sleep

\*LUCKY\*

After those weird comments from G I knew something was up and this is not the first time he said these words I remember Amanda saying he said the same thing to her. damn I could lose my friend because of this I could my life. I decide to call the mother of my child I had to warn her to be careful. After days of calling her she finally answered

Her: Lucky I told you never to call me

Me: Wendy I know but we got a serious problem on your hands

Her: what are you on about?

Me: G knows that is not his child

She gasped

Me: now we should talk right

Her: how does he know? Oh no I think he realised he can't have kids

She sounded scared and worried

Me: wait what he cant have kids?

She ignored me and sounded hysterically

Her: so you telling me he is going to kill me, I knew I shouldn't have slept with you I shouldn't have kept Sandile

Me: relax okay I never said he will kill you and my son deserves to live

Her: he has been acting strange okay he wants a second baby and he has been throwing shades about Sandile

Me: relax you can give him a baby can't you?

Her: are you stupid I just told you he can't have kids. I am scared Lucky what if he kills me what will happen you our son?

I heard G speaking through the phone

Him: who are you talking to?

Her: oh honey it is my friend

She tried to sound calm

Him: so who is going to kill you?

Me: listen came to my house later on okay

I hung up and sat in the kitchen just thinking of a way out, I put my phone on silence I just didn't want to be disturbed from my thinking

\*Amanda\*

I slowly opened my eyes and looked around I was in an unfamiliar bedroom, I was in a oversize shirt and my clothes were nicely packed on a chair. I looked around and I was alone I moved my hands and realise I was not strapped or tied, the door opened and Kenny got in he looked at me and warmly smiled

Him: relax I won't hurt you. If I wanted to I would have slept with you in my office

I rolled my eyes at the embarrassment that hit my thoughts. I took my phone and it was 6pm

Me: oh God I need to get home

He shook his head

Him: tell your kids you are spending the weekend here just to relax. You need to relax you are way too stressed

Me: I can't leave my kids alone

Him: and I cant risk you dying of a heartattack

I breathed out loudly and called Mpho

Him: mama are you okay?

Me: yes baby I can't back tonight will you be fine without me

Him: ah wena mama relax I got you, breathe and have fun and use a condom please we don't want another Mpilo

Me: I am your mom and older than you

He giggled

Him: we old mama and mama Zoe is here so you covered, and I know my ps4 is covered as well. Its just R6599 so don't worry mama I got you wena babes and I love you lots

Me: Mpho!

He hung up before I could finish talking to him and Kenny pointed next to me

Him: I figured you must be hungry so I brought you food

Me: oh thank you

He nodded and I ate

Him: enjoy and I will be in my bedroom if you need me

He was about to walk out when he turned and walked to me and kissed me, I wrapped my arms around his neck and he broke the kiss

Him: sleep

Me: sleep here with me

He smiled and shook his head

Me: no sex I promise

He rolled his eyes causing me to smile and he sat next to me and I offered him the food

Him: I ate

Me: nonsense come on have a bite

He took a bite and he ate with me, after we were done he put the plate next to the bed and moved me to the side, he switched off the light and joined me while kissing cheek and I faced the other way and he wrapped his arms around me making me feel safe. My body must have been tired because I fell asleep after just waking up

#### \*CHAPTER 24\*

I woke up in the morning and saw Kenny sitting on the edge of the bed, he kept looking and typing intensely on the phone. I crawled behind him and wrapped my arms around him from behind, he took my left hand and kissed before he turned to look at me smiling

Me: good morning

Him: sunshine how are you

Me: I am good thank you

Him: good I am also good thanks for asking

Me: you are not important here

He chuckled

Him: I am glad you slept I was worried about you. You look ten younger than yesterday

I moved from him and took the pillow and hit him on the head with it.

Him: honesty hurts doesn't it?

I went back to him and he rolled back and pulled me to him and I rested my head on his chest. He brushed my hair

Me: thank you for being here for me

Him: it's a pleasure

We fell into a comfortable silence

Him: so tell me where is your ex-husband?

Me: why do you want to kill him?

I felt his muscles tense up

Him: why would I want to kill him?

Me: I don't know it is something that your ex said. She said "does she know what you do for a living"

Him: and your initial reaction is I am a killer

Me: I am sorry

Him: don't be

He sat up and looked at me

Him: maybe she is talking about the tattoo parlour I own which was my friend's

Me: what happened to your friend?

He looked up a bit as if he was searching for something in his head and he looked at me deep into my eyes

Him: there was an arm robbery and he was shot dead

He looked at my face intensely as if he is search for some sort of validation from what he said

Me: oh I am sorry about that

Him: so you believe my story?

Is there something I shouldn't believe?

Me: yeah

He breathed out and started relaxing

Him: sorry its just some people always ask for details as if I was there

Me: why did you buy it?

Him: well I wanted to help his family since they wouldn't accept our money

Me: what money? Why wouldn't they accept it?

Him: oh I said that I mean our contributions me and my friend so I bought it anonymously

I don't know why he fabricated this story but I guess I will have to take his word for it

Me: so do you do remove tattoos

Him: duh

Me: don't you duh me, I need to remove a tattoo

I showed him my thigh and he kept looking at intensely

Him: why half a tattoo?

I explained the whole tattoo story to him and he had an amused looked on his face

Him: so when you guys made love did the butterfly fly?

Me: you are not serious

Him: oh but I am, did it sing fly me to the moon and let me play amongst the stars

I pouted looking at him and he pushed me down tickling my belly we just sat there looking at the ceiling laughing and tears were coming out of my eyes

Me: I need to freshen up before we ....

Him: oh yeah totally I mean I was thinking we were going to do it dirty

Me: do what dirty?

Him: what are you talking about?

Me: I was talking about breakfast what are you talking about?



Him: I was also talking about breakfast what are you thinking about girl? Damn your mind is superfast

Me: you the one who made it sound like...

Him: sound like what? Are you insane are we not friends?

Me: we are oh my god what is wrong with you?

He chuckled and I stood up limping to the floor

Him: where are you going?

Me: to look for a bathroom

He stood up and ran to me picking me up and putting me over his shoulder and tickled me again when we got to the bathroom he dropped me and gave me a fresh toothbrush and cloths

Me: do you always keep extra things?

Him: I always buy in bulks

We stood there looking at each other awkwardly I thought he would get the hint that I wanted to bath and he was disturbing me

Him: what?

Me: I need to shower and you are still here

He stood up and walked out. I took off his shirt and my underwear and opened the taps, the water pieced my skin I really felt rejuvenated and refreshed. After I was done I just stood there and I didn't want to leave I was lost in my own little world

\*KENNY\*

When I saw her I didn't think I would fall this hard for her what is happening to me I don't believe in love who am I kidding she has captured me. If she told me to jump now I would do it without thinking twice. Is it real falling in love with someone in one day?

I watched her sleep and my phone disturbed me

Me: hello

It was my half-brother calling I haven't talked to him much because I don't like the fact that he is choosing my path he doesn't know of the sacrifices I had to make to sustain this life. A lot of blood has been spilt and people died, it is a horror that follows you and hunts you for the rest of your life

Him: big bro I need your help

Me: I am good thanks and how are you

Him: please it is serious

Me: I obviously see you are not good. Talk to me

Him: I think my son is in danger

I breathed out loudly I knew he couldn't handle the pressure of such things

Me: what happened?

He told me his story and I kept brushing my head listening to him how stupid can he be

Me: okay I will come and get them safely okay, either than that are you okay?

Him: no the mother of my daughter left me and it hurts

Me: love is painful is it not?

He cried through the phone and I didn't judge him because I have been here before I know the pain very well I have survived the pain and nobody can say it is easy

Me: do you want me to trace them for you?

Him: no leave it I will find her myself, and I think it is good because now she won't be affected that much

Me: tell me her name

Him: I got it don't worry thanks for listening to me

Me: when I help you, you will work for me and you are leaving this life behind

Him: I promise

Me: and you are moving here to Pretoria deal

Him: deal

When he hung up I texted Chace that I needed his help. He told me he will look on to it and make sure my nephew is well taken care off, while I was still texting I felt her arms wrap around me and she brought some sense of calm to me and I kissed her hand she made fell warm again.

We spent the morning talking, the subject of Kagiso and the his family and tattoo palour is still very painful subject it was a deal that went wrong not to say I blame Chace we are friends and all but it was not okay so I had to think fast and conjure up a lie so we could move on to a move light conversation and really I wanted to see her laugh it doesn't take a fool to see she has been through a rough time in her life.

When I left her in the bathroom I just kept think about her, as much as I wanted her to be my friend I wanted to be more, but first I want her to deal with her demons and I will stand by her waiting for her to be fully mine.

I opened the bathroom door and saw her standing under the water and I took off my clothes, I couldn't help it. I joined her and she turned around looking startled and I smiled at her warmly

Her: I thought you didn't want this

I moved closer to her and our foreheads were touching while the water fell on us I put my hand on her neck and looked at her in her eyes. As much as I wanted to fuck her brains out right now I had to control myself she is fragile and she doesn't know what she is feeling she is hurt she has been hurt more than once

Me: ssh don't say anything

I put my finger on her mouth before moving it slowly down her lips her sweet perfect lips, I roam my fingers on her body and she closed her eyes and I kissed her neck, I picked her up and she wrapped her legs around me while I pinned her against the glass door she moaned in my ear and I smiled and released her. What are you doing Kenny you don't want to do this to her. You are not helping her rather this will damage her further. I moved from her and started to take a proper shower she put her arms around me and I closed my eyes trying to resist the urge to get her to scream my name. I opened them again and she took the scrub and washed my back all my muscles tensed up a bit.

After the shower I made her something to eat before giving her painkillers for her leg

Her: Kenny tell me more about yourself

Another subject I don't want to touch but I felt I could trust her so here goes

Me: well my parents divorced when I was 16 and my father won my custody not because my mother was incompetent but because my father was powerful at that time he made sure I never meet her again. He shacked up with a married woman called Philisile, I was male Cinderella she had a child with my father he was five meaning he has always been cheating on my mother. I hate that man he never believed me when I told him she was up to no good. When I was 18 years I went to her bedroom and she was naked I tried to leave

I closed my eyes at the thought at the feeling

Me: and we had sex then

Her: rape you?

Me: no she always wanted me and I thought why not just so I could hurt my father so I can make him cry and feel my mother's pain I don't regret it at all. we have never been close ever since

Her: wow

Me: does this change us?

Her: there is a us now?

I looked at her and she had a devilish smile

Me: want to see that there is an us uh?

I walked to her and she stood up trying to run away but her limping got the best of her and she collapsed in my arms and we both landed on the floor. I kept looking at her time seemed endless while she also looked at me, I wonder what she is thinking about.

Whether she is genuine or this is just pretend for her. I kissed her cheek and tried to get up and she pulled me to her and we shared a kiss the way she is teasing me it is becoming harder and harder to resist her. I was about to undress her when her phone rang and she got up and limped to it. She answered it and talked to her children

She looked at me smiling

Her: I owe my son a PS4 what the hell is that?

I dramatically gasped

Me: the biggest sin to a gamer's life I am shocked, but don't worry I bought my son three of those so I have an extra two to spare and few games he can have

Her: how old is your son?

Me: six

Her: we need to talk about your parenting skills clearly you are missing the point

Me: I am the best father

Her: no uh.ah

She said this shaking her head and I signed bowing my head down she really looked disappointed

## CHAPTER 25\*

\*AMANDA\*

We spent the whole day at his house it was so refreshing and relaxing to chill with a man without having any sexual relation with. I sat on top of him resting watching a movie with him, nothing much was said, the swelling on my feet was subsiding thanks to him being my doctor and massager and the pain killers he gave me. He was avoiding the talk I wanted to have with him regarding his parenting skills, but who am I to judge knowing that I left my children alone with Zoe. At six he drove me to the restaurant to fetch my car and drove behind me just to make sure I arrived safe and sound. He got off his car as soon as I parked and I walked over to him smiling like a love sick teenager

Him: so did you have fun homie?

I laughed when he said that imagine a grown ass man calling you homie no this is not right

Me: yes thank you

Him: what are plans for tomorrow?

Me: well tomorrow I am driving my kids to school and taking Mpilo to get a shot, drive to work and when I am done drive to my therapist

Him: mind if I tag along to your therapist

I looked at him amazed not many people will ask you this

Him: I won't be going in it is just to be close to you. After work you come to me we have lunch and drive to you therapist

Me: I have scheduled an appointment so I can't miss it for lunch

Him: okay after session we are having the frunch

I laughed

Me: fine frunch it is

Him: good than we having frunch and don't be late. Actually you wont because we are driving together

He kissed my cheek and I watched him get in his car and drive away. My heart was beating with every picture of him that crossed my mind. I have to admit I am rather smitten by this kind heart gentleman who is not taking advantage of me rather allowing me to be me around him. Why do I feel this way? I was about to walk to my house when he came back and called me back I walked to him and he walked out carrying a box

Him: you forgot a console for you son

Me: and we need to talk about yours having...

He didn't let me finish he put the console and rushed to his car driving off, I just shook my head men and running away from the truth will never change. I picked the console up and walked inside with it, Mpho came to give me a hug and I returned it

Me: hey sweet baby

Him: hey mom did you have fun

Me: ai suka wena

Him: I am pulling your leg mama so I see you got me my thing

He snatched from me evaluating it and he jumped up and down for joy

Him: yazi wena mama you are the best as they come. now we should hide this from Naledi and we will open it on my birthday

Me: oh you are turning 17 next week we should do something special

Him: no I am hanging with my new friends

Me: okay so we not cool for you anymore

Him: well Mpilo can tag along and get me the honnies but you I think I will be single for the rest of my life if you came

Me: ouch! And stop talking about exploiting your baby sis

I tried chasing him and he was fast running all the way to my room to hide his game and I sat on the couch watching T.V he later came to join me and rested his head on my shoulder

Me: do tell where is your sister?

Him: she is acting like a madam of this house she went to a sleep over with her new friend and my baby sis is sleeping now as we speak

Me: why didn't you call me?

I was fuming no daughter of mine will do a sleep over without me knowing where or with whom she is with

Him: I knew you were going to be angry and I really don't want you stressing over people anymore

I pulled his head closer to my lips and I kissed it, I took my phone I wanted to dial Naledi and tell her a piece of my mind when I noticed a missed call from Lucky. I tried calling him back but it just went straight to voicemail. We went to sleep for the night

\*KENNY\*

Waking up on the Monday morning I felt empty, I looked at the side she was sleeping in and ran my fingers up and down, I remember everything we did the whole weekend. One thing I remember particularly was when she sat on top me I was brushing her smooth skin squeezing her behind it took all it had in me not to react the way my brain was telling me to react. I should be resting in my room but I opted to rest here in the guest room. I was about to get up when Gertrude my cleaner and my gardener walked in kissing they didn't even see me so I pretended to be sleeping

Him: are you sure about this?

Her: I checked his room he is not here

They landed on top of me when they reached the bed and I kept looking at them

Me: oh it is nice when I am not here

Her: sir I we

Me: don't explain if you love each other I don't mind

I got up and walked to the gardener my face was so close to his and my lips were right on his ear

Me: she is my friend and comforter if she cries or refuses to come to work because she is heartbroken I won't hesitate to cut you piece by piece while I watch you scream and I will make sure to feed you your own flesh

I felt as he swallowed the lump on his throat, I pulled back and I could see the fear in his eyes hell I can taste it. he was too afraid to even react

Her: Kenny don't scare Dan like this

I turned to her with a different expression

Me: I am just making sure you got yourself a food man, oh and seriously thank you for not using my main bedroom I have to go to work

I winked at her while she giggled

Her: pray tell why are you here and not your main bedroom?

I looked at her and shook my head walking away from her

Her: I hope you used protection

I did my morning ritual and drove straight to Freddie's club and found the guys sitting there I joined them

Chace: look who is here

Arthur: you always hide behind the walls of your house

Me: says someone who is married to their work

They laughed

Me: seriously are we here to discuss business or?

Chace: I tried to find your nephew but I guess she is good at hiding because I cannot find her

Me: what do you mean?

Chace: I looked for her and she is nowhere to be found

Me: excuse me

I stood up and left them there calling my little brother

Me: hey bro

Him: hey

Me: did you tip off your girlfriend?

Him: yes why?

Me: we cannot find her, don't panic don't panic maybe she is hiding well away from people and her husband

Him: I will look at it this side. What if?

Me: no don't think the worst yet okay it could be nothing. After I hung up I spent the whole morning and half of the afternoon with the guys Mal and Freddie where not with us. My phone rang and it was Amanda

Me: I have to go

Them: ohhhhhh

Me: oh just grow up will you

Chace: should we start singing wedding songs

Me: you will do that on his wedding



I pointed at Arthur dude has been engaged he is turning his fiancé into lord of the rings I cant deal with that. I left them arguing and drove to Amanda I found her waiting for me

Her: are sure you want to come

I nodded and we drove in my car I waited for her in the reception and she was in for an hour. She came back smiling

Me: how was it

Her: it was good but it was supposed to be one hour 30minutes. He says he wants to talk to you for the remaining 30

I nodded and walked in to find a man in suit and ties. I don't know why I am here but really I just wish I was eating the lunch and talking instead of meeting his guy

Him: good day sir

Me: sir

Him: you are with Amanda right?

I nodded

Him: I want to tell you that are you aware of her mental history?

I shook my head

Him: she is suffering from P.D.D that is Persistent Depressive Disorder which occurs ...

Me: yeah I know what it is I have seen my mother suffer from it when I was a baby and my father took me from her

Him: well I want you to know that I will not appreciate if you took advantage of her she is vulnerable and she trusts to easily I don't think she wants a relationship she wants someone to make her woman enough to make her feel the love she is craving after her husband changed and made her feel like a worthless piece of shit. She left the father of her second baby because not everything will be like the way she pictured it to be she wants a man to validate her worth. Can you live up to that standard?

Me: I can try

Him: I don't want you to try I have seen her go to the state of depression so deep her children had to call me to come to their house to help her while she laid there like a log or a lifeless person. She is fragile and it hurts her that she couldn't hold a relationship together

I breathed out loudly thinking off the pain she might have gone through

Him: if you stay with her and break her she might not survive this. She has attempted suicide more than once, she was framed for the murder of her father in law she saw the man she once loved kill another man and nearly went to prison for it. She was raped and was nearly raped in prison

Me: she was not convicted yet

Him: she was denied bail

Me: well than I am not leaving her ever

Him: but...

Me: I will be with her all the way

I stood up and left him there and found her reading a magazine, she looked up and I changed my expression to accommodate hers and kneeled in front of her pulling her in for a kiss. If she is broke we will be broken together. I love her for pain does not define her worth but the way she carries herself through the pain is what defines her worth

#### \*CHAPTER 26\*

I don't know what happened between Kenny and my therapist but he was so different after he came from there he was treating me like a queen a very special queen not that I am complaining but it felt good to be loved unconditionally like this. A month Passed and everything was going great between us keeping this "friendship" I don't know how long this will last, each and every day he has made fall in love with him more and more and I yearned for him

Mpho: mama since I am 17 and I celebrated with my friends I was thinking it is time I get a licence don't you think

Me: you said you are how old again

Him: 17

Me: exactly you will get your licence next year not this year at all

Him: but ma!

Me: baby please don't stress me out like this Naledi is already giving me a hard time so please don't add to my stress

Him: ok

He was about to walk away I can see how hurt he was about the situation between me and Naledi he even lied and said he saved enough money to buy the console so that Ledi doesn't hate me more than she already has. She has even requested that I don't drive her to see her father and I can't say I complain about that she has hired a private transport and Simon's mother pays for it

Me: baby

He turned around and I tossed him my car keys

Me: if my car comes back with a single scratch you are not getting the licence ever

He jumped up and down with joy

Naledi: wow giving your 17year old your car keys how responsible

We both turned to her and Mpho stuck his tongue out and left us

Me: baby do you honestly hate me that much?

Her: I don't even know why you are asking is it not obvious?

Me: know what we need to talk

Her: we are talking

Me: please

She sat down and looked at me

Me: do you honestly thing that little of me?

Her: what are you talking about?

Me: do you honestly think I would frame your father, get him to prison, him break out and rape me. me having Mpilo and leaving Lucky. You sure do give me too much credit

Her: what am I to believe my dad is laying there in the hospital bed?

Me: did it not cross your mind that he is manipulating you?

Her: no he is not

Me: here you are hating me for something I did not do!

We both kept quiet and stared at each other

Me: where you there when he was hurt? Where you there when he hurt me and nearly killed me he made sure he had a rope to make it look like suicide

She looked away with tears in her eyes and I moved closer to her

Me: don't let your dad hurt you like this, I know you love with all my heart but baby please

Mpho: I am glad you are talking and Naledi think about this if daddy loves you the way he says he does why would he use you like you are his chess pawn in his dirty game? Wake up baby girl your father is not who you think he is

She finally let out a painful sob and I brought her in for a hug

Him: I want to feel sorry for you but no I don't you deserve this pain

Me: Mpho baby

Him: no mama

Me: no you know better than this please for my sake

He rolled his eyes and held Naledi's chin making her look at him

Him: no more fighting in this house deal?

She nodded and they shared a brief hug. He produced his devilish smile and looked at me

Him: so mama when are me meeting your new boyfriend

Me: what are you talking about?

He took out a tie and showed it to me

Him: we are not going to be angry

My mouth was left open I don't even remember when Kenny left that tie in my car I just looked at Naledi waiting to see her reaction, he ran out of the house laughing I was even too shocked to react. She just stood up and walked to her room while I breathed, there I was breaking through to her and Mpho chose now to start with his lame jokes.

This is a mess, I stood up and found my infant attempting to crawl I kneeled down and watched her raise her knees up and balancing herself with her hands. She wasn't aware I was watching and fell she did this over and over again until she finally could balance herself. When she caught me staring she relaxed her body and I walked over to her tickling her and she just laughed in my arms after I scoped her and we walked to Naledi's bedroom and I found her crying

Me: baby are you okay?

She turned and looked at me

Her: does he love me?

Me: I don't know but what I know is that I love you baby I put you first and sometimes it is hard to distinguish between lies and truth especially if it his said she said. So all you need to know is that I love you okay

I kissed her forehead and I attempted to walk out

Her: mama are you dating?

I turned and I looked at her

Me: we are just friends

She smiled. While I lied I wanted more than friendship

Her: you know you sometimes need partners but mama I want you to be sure and don't do to him what you did to bhuti Lucky he deserves better you still left him with more questions than answers

I looked at her and winked walking away with Mpilo. We sat on the kitchen table and I feed her porridge. The day went by fast with nothing eventful happening just me and my daughters getting close to each other. And Naledi forgiving herself to be honest. I kissed them goodnight and Mpho came back late with my car and I also kissed him goodnight. I walked to my bedroom and shifted my daughter so I could sleep my phone rang and it was Kenny

Me: night calls?

He chuckled

Him: well today you flat out ignored me

Me: I was bonding with my kids

Him: well is she talking to you

Me: yes and I told her Mpilo's father couldn't have possibly do this and that Simon could be framing him to get to me

Him: well who is this mystery guy?

Me: you love people's business I am not telling you

Him: I will have to squeeze it out of you

Me: not happening ever

He chuckled and we continued talking for a while and I passed out mid conversation because I was tired and having an infant at my age is not easy now having three children demanding your attention is very difficult.

\*KENNY\*

One day I haven't seen or heard from her I felt like I was going crazy I don't know why she has this effect on me and I know it is not healthy it can never be healthy. While I was talking to her she slept whilst we were mid conversation. Well she needs the rest because today I met her son and he seemed like a nice person I stole his contacts from her phone. I asked him to meet up with me and her told me he will come I shouldn't pick her up.

I was planning something romantic for her tomorrow she deserves to be spoiled rotten and I wanted to meet her children and get to know them I don't want to replace their father but I wanted them to know that they can trust me. Tomorrow I have a feeling a lot of things are going to change for the better

\*LUCKY\*

It has been a month since my son has disappeared I decided to go to G's house just so to know what was happening. When I got there I found him sitting outside looking like a mess

Me: so still no sign of Sandile?

He shook his head and looked down feeling tensed

Me: we need to involve the police

Him: no are you crazy

Me: what else can we do?

Him: we can do a manhunt

Me: that will take time

Him: why are you so worried about finding my son than looking for your daughter and Amanda?

Me: because he need me as well

Him: well he is my son after all is he not?

I paused and looked at him, it felt like he was pushing my buttons trying to fish something from me and I nearly busted that he is my son and not yours but I know I have to keep my cool. I know I need to calm down if I want to find my son ever again

Me: your son is my son we are brothers blood or not

Him: can brothers hurt each other to the point where they hate each other?

Me: it depends with a situation and right now we should focus on finding our son and bringing him back Mfuwethu I need you to be on your sharpest

Him: what if she ran away and doesn't want to come back to me? or you?

Me: why would she come back to me?

Him: I don't know you tell me why?

I brushed my head in frustration this is not the time to play mind games and he is here wasting my time I should be out here looking for him I know he is scared and confused where ever he is. I know he is asking for me and G and I know he is crying. Why am I having these instincts?

Me: you know what it is time to involve my brothers

Him: do you want to look like a whimp to them please respect me and fix yourself we don't need them we never did. I don't need them do you?

He is right they are going to keep telling me that I should quite this life and whatnot I am sick and tired of being pushed around by them I am sure as hell won't let them win and I will not fail my son

Me: we should start now we can do this

He flashed out his smiled and we did a man hug

Him: beside it is my wife and kid and it is your nephew by water blood

I tensed up a little as we started looking for possible clues in his house

\*KENNY\*

I woke up super excited and texted Mpho asking him if mother and daughter are really on speaking terms I couldn't bear to see Amanda break like this because of her daughter mistreating her. He texted back and said it was cool and everyone was talking once more. In the afternoon all the sculptures and paintings I made for her where delivered. After setting up I drove to her place and went in. I rang the doorbell and she looked shocked to see me

Her: hello

She kept looking behind her to see if her children are here and I popped my head in as well

Me: hey are you okay?

I wanted to tease her

Her: I wasn't expecting you that is all

Me: can I come in?

Her: oh sorry yeah you can

She made way and I got in. Mpho came running down and we man hugged

Me: sup?

Him: I am feeling fresh

Her: so you two know each other

Him: yeah we went out yesterday

Her daughter came down and she walked to me and I greeted and introduced myself to her and she did the same. She had a faint smile

Naledi: friends huh mama?

Her: baby

Naledi: it is fine ma wena Kenny neh if you hurt her I will haunt you in your dreams

I laughed and she came out carrying a sleeping baby, I took her in my arms and she had this familiar look that I have seen before. I kept staring at her and she really looked beautiful why can't I get her face off my mind? It's like I know her

Her: are you okay?

Me: yeah she just has familiar look like I know the person she looks like

She smiled and took her from me and I took her back

Me: Amy can you wear something nice I am treating you tonight your children can come with

Mpho: noo.... We are good her right Ledi?

She nodded and winked

Him: and we will take care of Mpilo I mean mama Zoe is here when just get the land mama

Amanda looked defeated and walked to her bedroom and Naledi followed her leaving me with a sleeping infant and Mpho

Me: are you like this with your mother?



He nodded and we sat down just talking and joking he was open with me. When she came down we both stood up and I kept looking at her. I couldn't believe my eyes and I almost dropped my child. Wait did I just say my child?

Him: let me take her from you

He took Mpilo and I walked to Amanda rather speechless

Naledi: I told you mama that he will love it

She looked nervous and we bid the children farewell, I drove her to my house

Me: close your eyes

She did and I walked her to the rooftop. When we got there she opened her eyes and was shocked to see portraits of her and her children she choked on her own tears and I smiled at her. We sat down for the candlelit dinner and we ate over a light conversation. I wanted her to feel special before making love to her. I played Joe I believe in you and asked her to dance with me when the song ended I positioned my hands and picked her up and kissed her neck while she wrapped her legs around me and we shared a kiss we laid on a blanket and looked at the stars just talking.

We stood up and I walked her to my bedroom she went to the bathroom and I got in the blankets she came out wear a lingerie and I couldn't move my eyes from her, she climbed on the bed and sat between me. I tried to react but I was tongue tied and she pushed me down and came in for a kiss. I am usually in control but I let her take control as I uncapped her bra and she moaned in my ear just increasing my sexual drive. I wanted to take control but she stopped me and I let her do my thing it definitely was with the wait. Both our phones rang and we ignored then just lost in our own world we didn't want to lose our magic

Admin's note because I love you

\*\*\*\*\*Last time we bask in the romance enjoy it because now things are about to blow up\*\*\*\*

\*CHAPTER 27\*

I woke up next to her radiating beauty I watched her as she peacefully breathed in and out I feel like I have won in life I have a successful career as an IT and businessman, I live a luxurious life. I am an underground criminal and now I am sleeping next to a woman who completes me who is a total opposite of me who has a past that is fit to kill one's spirit. But here she is fighting in to live and be free.

I kissed her soft tender lips and worked my way down to her womanhood the moment my lips touched her sacred palace she jerked up and started moving to the pleasure I was giving her. she pressed my head against her and I felt the juices cover my lips I love to hear her moan in satisfaction because it means I was doing a job well done which makes me want to do it again I was not tired of hearing her screaming out my name and moaning.

I moved up and kissed her on the lips while her eyes where still closed, she took control last night but now it is my turn to show her what she has been missing for the past seven months even more give her what she never got in her life. I separated her legs and found my way in her she pulled the sheets as I was thrusting in and out, I put her leg on my shoulder and allowed me more access.

She kept moving like a wild possessed woman and I liked it. I wanted her to scream I have been craving for her so long and now she is finally mine and I made sure to mark my territory by leaving love bites on her. We both climaxed and I rolled to the side and searched for the condom there was nothing, I stood up and nothing there should be two at least

Her: what is wrong?

Me: nothing

I didn't want to alarm her, I joined her on the bed and she rested her head on my chest as our heart most probably beat as one the door opened and Gertrude walked in carrying a food tray

Gert: oh I am sorry

She looked red on the face when she saw us and Amanda looked equally scared

Me: oh that's Gerts and this is Amanda I call her Amy you can choose whatever nickname to call her

Her: really Kenny this is not the time

Me: oh Gerts get a chair and sit down getting to know her

They both looked defeated

Me: don't look at me like that

Her: you can be an ass you know that

Gertrude walked out laughing while Amanda started hitting me with pillows turning this into a pillow fight and we laid next to each other exhausted and breathing loudly I turned to her, she looked at me blushing

Me: I am glad to see you this happy

Her: thank you

She turned to the side and I turned her face to look at me and kissed her forehead

Me: I want you to promise me that if you have a problem you will talk to me and should anything disturbed you ever you won't be afraid to talk to me

She nodded

Me: tell me you love me

She smiled and looked away shyly

Me: Because I know I do and I won't say it until you do

She smiled

Her: I love you fool

She planted a kiss on my mouth

Her: and thank you for loving me

Me: and I think we should change your therapist

Her: why?

Me: he is in love with you and I kind of hacked into his stuff

She sat up fast

Me: so I went to his house and found pictures of you

She continued looking at me

Me: and we had a decent conversation like adults with tea and cookies

She looked puzzled I am not about to say I tied him on the chair and beat him till he bled and cried for me to stop. Or that I electrocuted him with the help of my friends of course she well know what I tell her. She looked at the time and me

Her: okay I think we should go to church

I looked at her like she spoke a foreign language. The last time I went to church I was 6 and my mother was praying for her husband to return but what God is she serving if he couldn't answer her prayers and left her in a depressed state she lost everything whilst she was a praying to God she cried and all her tears where ignored. I watched her suffer and I told myself I will never set foot there ever

Her: race you to the bathroom

She got down and I caught her before she could even get to the bathroom and looked into her eyes while she smiled

Me: I am not going to church

I watched her spirit being crushed and I knew I had to make it better

Me: I will come with you next time I am busy today

Which reminds me

Me: oh last night you received a missed call

Her: oh

She went over to her phone and checked it

Her: it was Mpho telling me he and Naledi are going to a friend's house and they left Mpilo with Zoe they will be back tomorrow after school

She walked into the bathroom and checked mine it was my younger brother I tried calling back and he didn't answer. I joined her in the bathroom and we just sat there in the bathtub she asked me why I hated church

Me: who told you I hate church

Her: I should be on my way now and you are delaying my day

I kissed the back of her neck and washed her back and decided to fondle with her breasts

Me: I made a promise to myself

Her: what promise?

I explained the story to her and she looked at me it is weird because she has the weird parallel life to that of my mother

Her: I am sorry about your mother but to blame God

Me: tell me you never blamed God for your situation

She looked down and I realised I broke her

Me: I am sorry

She looked at me and wiped away the tears

Her: it is fine

We got out of the water and got dressed. We spent the whole afternoon in door with me trying to make up to her for what I said to her. At night I took her to see my friends and she was nervous and I held her hand close to mine

Chace: Kenneth Swanepoel who it this?

Freddie: what happened to Ntombizodwa?

I forgot I never told him about my relationship

Her: hello

Chace's wife Busi stood first and hugged her, they all welcomed her and I could feel Freddie's eyes on her and Chace nudged me to stop worrying

Her: Dr van Zyl?

Me: you know each other?

Chace: she is the woman who I told you about

Me: dammit I should have clicked it when she told

I dragged her to sit next to me and she tried to loosen up

Me: they won't bite

Her: I know I am just getting used to them haow

I chuckled she is cute when she gets mad, after a while she was talking to the ladies and getting used to them I liked how they relaxed around her. I drove her home and when I arrived at my house I found my brother's car parked inside I walked in and found him sitting on the couch it looked like he was crying he just hugged himself and I joined him down

Me: talk to me

He didn't answer he just kept shaking his head over and over again saying he messed up

\*AMANDA\*

After a fun day with Kenny and finally telling him my feelings he dropped me home and drove off, I looked out the gate and I saw the black audi again my heart skipped a beat thinking I left this at KZN. Instead of driving away the door opened and the driver came to me I tried to reach out for my phone to call Kenny and my hand were shaking

Him: I got a package for you

He gave me a box and he smiled

Him: tell your boyfriend or ex I have what he needs

He walked away and I opened the box and found a picture of Sandile and his mother, her head was decapitated while Sandile laid next to her. I took my phone and took a picture and sent it to Lucky crying who was that and why did he give me this. I walked into my house and found Zoe sleeping on the table which is weird because she usually sleeps with my daughter. I shook her over and over again until finally she woke up. I wanted to go up to my daughter but fear prevented me what if? I don't want to think the worst I cant think the worst just yet

Her: Amanda

She looked confused and mumbled to herself pointing at the chair next opposite hers

Me: what is wrong?

Her: there was a man here he said he knows you and you are friends

Me: and?

Her: I offered him tea and told him to wait for you and the next thing I felt a sharp pain on my neck

Me: and?

I felt fear take over my body I don't want this to be true my daughter cannot be missing no no no please don't make it true Lord I am sorry I didn't come to church but please let this just be paranoia

Her: I don't know, everything became blank afterward I remember him walking upstairs and he laughed like he was crazy

Me: where is my daughter?

Her: she was in her room sleeping

I blinked away the tears and rushed upstairs to look for my daughter when I got in the bed was empty. Only the spot that marked that she was sleeping was visible

Me: NO! NO! NO!

I felt a scream escape my throat I searched the room like a crazy person even lifting her bed I cannot leave any spot unchecked she could be under the carpet, I searched room for room and nothing. I felt dizzy just thinking of my daughter where is she? Lord I can't lose her now why is this happening lord please give her back to me please

Zoe: I am sorry

I just looked at her while tears escaped I cried uncontrollable the feeling of losing your child not knowing how she is doing, who is with her, what is she eating, how is she handled is unbearable this hurts more than being raped and my husband leaving me after torturing me. My baby please help me I need you

I took out my phone and called the person I needed I knew he was reliable

\*KENNY\*

Me: talk to me please I cannot see what is in your head

He looked at me and received a message he was afraid to look at it and I pulled him in for a hug my brother is everything to me when he moved in to my home I took care of him and gave him unconditional love. I was angry at my father but he didn't ask to be born. He is and will always be my little man. We may be different me half white and him half black we share the same asshole of a father. Yes my mother is white and his is black but he is my brother

Me: talk to me!

He was about to talk and my phone rang it was Amanda, I wanted to ignore it and be there for my brother but I couldn't I answered and she screamed painfully through the phone

Me: Amy please calm down

Her: she is gone! They took her! Someone took my baby! Mpilo is gone!

She was sobbing between her speech it took me a second to make sense of what she said

Me: ohh baby I am coming okay

Just as I was talking my brother screamed as well throwing his phone, I looked at him

Me: and nou?!

Him: my son someone took my son and sent me the picture his mother is dead and he is laying there next to her bro my son

He loudly sobbed I kept looking at my phone and my brother I didn't even know which one to attend to. How do I divide myself?

Me: Lucky are you sure?

He just held on to me

Him: I should have trusted you, I should have left G when you told me to I am sorry I didn't leave please help me

I nodded and I could still hear Amanda crying she forgot to hung up. I held my head on my hand rubbing it furiously

\*CHAPTER 28\*

Me: Lucky calm down and tell me everything thing from the start

Him: G know that Sandile is not his child he just didn't know who the father is he kept testing me seeing if I can break and I didn't know while we were together he took my things to test our DNA and....

He couldn't continue talking and I just held him close to me

Me: we will find him okay you do trust me right

He nodded

Him: I need you please don't leave me

I wanted to be there for him fully but Amanda needs me as well

Me: I have to be somewhere for just two seconds I will be back

Him: he told me not to contact you and Mandla I didn't know he was planning an escape all along I tried to find him and I got no luck

Me: nobody can ever disappear in my eyes I will find him

I stood up to leave he held my hand

Me: I will be back I promise you okay

I wiped his tears and walked out. I got in my car and drove to Amanda's house and called Chace telling him the situation, when I got to Amanda's house I found Mpho sitting outside crying

Me: what is going on?

Him: it's Mpilo she is gone and know mama is back to being depressed

Me: when did you come here?



Him: Zoe called me and told me that mama needs us and that our little sis is gone  
He was breaking and started crying I tried to shush him and he hugged me closer to him

Me: don't worry I will find her

Him: I called my grandparents to come and help us

I kissed his forehead and helped him up

Him: I just feel so useless I should have never left her. I should have been here she needed me and I have left her to be taken

Me: hey snap out of it you didn't know, it is not your fault, you really shouldn't blame yourself. It is not your fault okay

He looked down and I forced him to look at me

Me: repeat after me I am not at fault

He repeat the word and broke down I held him and he cried on my shoulder

Me: forgive yourself and you are not to blame ever

We walked inside the house and it was a mess everything was turned upside-down, I searched for her and found her laying next to her daughter's bed

Naledi: Mr Kenny

Me: call me uncle ken

She smiled through her tears and I hugged her

Me: It will be alright

Her: will it?

Me: I will make sure of it

She nodded and I walked to Amanda and she looked into space. I moved closer to her and lifted her face when she saw me she blinked a couple of times trying to blink away her tears

Her: she is coming right, I will find her right?

I nodded and opened my arms and she got in them crying

Me: let it all out baby

Her: what if it is Si...

Me: shh

I asked Naledi to walk-out and she agreed leaving me with Amanda

Me: be careful we don't want your kids to hate their father unnecessary okay

She nodded and looked into space

Me: no Amanda baby. Baby come back to me. honey don't do this

She looked at me and I nodded

Me: I need you to be strong for your daughter she needs you okay

She nodded and I helped her up. We sat on the chair and I talked to Zoe she explained what happened she looked sad and broken

Me: did you get the guy's name

Her: no he said he wanted to surprise her

I closed my eyes listening to this stupidity

Me: okay

Her parents came in and her mother ran to sit next to Amanda they both cried and I allowed them space her father came to me and asked me who I was. I introduced myself and the old man was really not that pleased to see me and I understand

Me: I have a plan can I take her to my house and you can stay with the children

Him: never my daughter is staying here with me

Me: while she is depressing her children they need someone who is not in her mental stage

Him: I can handle my own daughter thank you

Me: what are you on about she needs to be away from the situation and I know you can handle her

Him: so you want to take advantage of the situation

Me: no sir I love and respect your daughter I wont take advantage of her

Mother: baba please I think he is trying to help, he means well and look at your daughter she is breaking her own children she is not responding to anything I am saying I tried now to get through to her

He walked to Amanda and tried to talk to her but nothing she continued looking at space like life has escaped from her. I walked to her

Me: Amy

She continued looking into space

Me: Amanda

She looked at me and forced a smile

Me: don't smile I need you to listen to me

She nodded

Me: I am taking you with me okay, you will be staying with me and my younger brother okay

She nodded and looked at her children she called them and they hugged her

Mpho: mommy it is okay you can stay with uncle Kenny

Naledi: and I will hold the front for you mama bear

She smiled and I helped her up

Father: take care of her

I nodded and I put her in my car Zoe came out with clothes for her to wear and I took them with me and loaded them in the boot of my car and drove off to my house when I got there the lights were off and I guided Amanda to my room and she threw herself on the bed, I tried to go and look for Lucky and she held my hand I sighed heavily and joined her while she buried her face on my neck and she cried and I guess Lucky will be strong for now he is a man after all.

I woke up in the morning and walked to my laptop connecting Lucky's broken phone to it and I found G's numbers. I tried to trace them and no luck at all, I got up and walked to the kitchen to make food as I was chilling my friends got in as well as Lucky's cousin/uncle Mandla followed by a beautiful woman

Mandla: Kenny oh and this is Karabo my wife

I looked at him and nodded my head in response and greeted the lovely woman I wonder what he saw in him

Him: is he here?

Me: yeah he is

She asked where he was and I pointed to his room she went there without a fight

Mal: did you find anything?

I shook my head

Chace: I asked the neighbours and they said he was working with a woman

Me: I just wish I knew who this woman was

Mandla: if you want I can contact ...

Me: don't even think about it

Mandla: well he is outside

I closed my eyes exhaling loudly when Kamogelo came I lost my cool. I know him from an orphanage he was in. I had a friend called Leroy and by the age of 16 he went to jail while I was forced into Military by my father, I served two years before I met Chace and I could see he was also broke like me, he was weak trying to be strong and I took him in we helped each other in military he was my only friend and he introduced me to Mal and this life, they like the fact I taught myself I.T and I could hack into any system in the world. I was not the best but I am good at what I am doing

Me: you!

Him: can we talk about this later I am here to help?

I moved closer to him and started strangling him

Me: I told you I don't care about you using kids from the orphanage but don't involve my little brother in your schemes but you never listened did you? Now look at what is happening to my little brother

Him: I am sorry

I couldn't control myself this son of a bitch uses people to his advantage to get what he wants but he crossed the line when he used my brother I have been boiling to finish him off and now finally the opportunity presented itself. I couldn't hear people screaming in the background I could feel a few people touching me but my blood was boiling I wanted to get this over and done with he has to die this son of a bitch has to die

Amanda: Kenny please stop

I loosened my grip listening to her voice it was so broken and she was crying I wish I just wish I was the one who could take the pain from her. I walked over to her and I couldn't hear what anyone was saying I put my hand on her neck and rested my head on her head

Me: are you okay?

She nodded and she was shaking I pulled her in for a hug

Lucky: Amanda?

I turned to him and she did the same. He looked shocked to see her and she equally looked the same

Her: Lucky?

Him: what are you doing here?

Me: she just lost her child wait how do you know each other?

He looked at me

Him: she is the mother of my daughter

Me: Mpilo?

He nodded and I looked at her while she looked shock to even move

Me: is it true baby?

She nodded and I closed my eyes at this situation I find myself in

Him: bhuti did you just call her baby?

She held on tightly to me she didn't even know how to react I could feel her sinking deeper into depression she was more shocked when he called me Bhuti

Me: if her child is your child than that means Gordon has both your children

He nodded and I could feel her legs fail her I picked her up

Her: he took my children

She sobbed in my ear

Him: wait are you guys dating

I didn't want to answer him I picked her up and took her to the bedroom

Him: bhuti answer me!

I could feel his rage but there was nothing I could do. We are going to deal with her dating both me and Lucky later but for now I am not allowing him close to her she is suffering because of his stupidity. She is mine and mine alone she will be mine till I die. I love her I am not letting her slip through my fingers. My Amy I deserve her. I know I sound obsessed but she is mine so help me lord blood while spill if she cheats on me or even glance my brother's direction I will kill him myself I love him but we won't share my woman

I sat on the bed with her and cradled her like a baby both her legs were on either side of my thighs. She didn't move she just rested on my neck I couldn't care less about what other people are saying outside I just wanted to comfort her and kiss her fears away she is mine and I will make sure of it. I heard a woman's voice demanding to talk to her, she

lifted her head up shaking it and a woman came in my bloody room. She rushed to her side

Amanda: get out!

The rage in her voice scared me for a second

Her: Amanda please

She had pleading eyes

Amanda: Anele phuma please I am begging you

Her: Amanda we have been friends since we were 5 I am sorry for the pain you are going through

Amanda: how did you find me here?

Her: your mother told me and Mpho showed me here can we put the past behind us and move on I miss you friend let me be here for you

Amanda: who told you that my daughter is missing?

She looked down and couldn't answer. I knew right there she knows something

Amanda: get out and never come back here or anywhere near me ever again

She walked out and I looked at Amanda

Me: baby go bath I need to do something

She nodded and walked to the bathroom she looked like a zombie. I rushed after this Anele chick there is something there that needed to be sorted out from her. I followed her and heard her talking to someone through the phone. I checked the model and walked to her. I touched her and she seemed startled and hung up

Me: please come in don't be afraid I think Amy needs a friend and she is hiding it

She nodded and she sat on the kitchen I walked to Chace

Me: I think I found a lead

He nodded while I took out a demo phone that looks like hers and I walked to her Mal joined us I offered her tea and we had a general conversation she seemed down and I would if I had something to do with my friend's down state. When we were done I moved to her and hugged her while Mal swiped the phone and he walked inside and she walked away I connected her phone on my laptop and found out the last person she called was G and I traced his location which pointed he was close to the border gate. Son of a bitch is planning to skip the country with my child and nephew. Wait with my niece and nephews

Me: he is planning to skip the country. He is living in an old abandoned house

Chace: not on my watch he won't leave this country we are going there tonight plus I am a step ahead of you He need that Anele girl and I made sure Jay catches her we have her with us

Me: thank you so we going to do a surprise visit tonight

He nodded

Chace: you know it

Kamo: can I come I know how he operates I trained him after all

Chace: the more the merrier

I stood up and punched him before going to my room to look for Amanda and found her in the bedroom having a heated argument with Lucky she was literally breaking and I watched them while she pushed him away they were both hurting each other with words that will haunt them i am sure of it

\*CHAPTER 29\*

\*LUCKY\*

Nothing hurts more than seeing the woman you love loving another man and more so loving your own brother the betrayal. This is the same woman who just decided to up and leave me, who took my daughter from. This is the woman who cried on my shoulder when shit hit the fan in her marriage the same woman who would have sex with me at the gate of her marital home. I guess I was just another distraction in her life I guess she loves sex more than she values herself and I hate it, it makes her cheap and here I was crying for her loving her and she opens her legs for the first man she sees

I watched my brother chasing after Anele and I walked to his bedroom

Mandla: Mzala no let it go

I shook my head

Me: I need answers I can't allow her to do this

Chace: I know you are hurting but she is also hurting don't confront her now

Me: stop telling me what to do I am going to see her

I left them there fuming and walked to his room, I got in without knocking and I didn't find her. I walked to his bathroom and found her sitting in the corner of the shower in her clothes and the water splashing over. I touched her and she didn't move I called out to her and she still didn't move

Me: so it's going to be like this Amanda?

She continued looking at the empty space with tears running down her cheeks

Me: crying wont solve anything might as well get this over and done with

She didn't answer

Me: AMANDA!

She looked at me terrified and stood up leaving for the bedroom, I followed her

Her: what do you want?

Me: answers that is what I want are you going to give them to me?

Her: are they going to bring back my daughter?

I looked at her shocked I wasn't expecting that I love her dammit and now I endangered our daughter

Me: no but they can mend my broken heart

Her: I don't care about your broken heart I want my daughter back

Me: and we will get her back. Now why did you leave?

She looked down wiping the tears from her eyes she was dripping wet

Me: you said you love, damn I was blind you only wanted sex from me. You only wanted an escape route and you used me

Her; you used me as well! Sleeping with me so you could get to Simon, you and Sindy working together to destroy my marriage, I couldn't do it anymore Lucky it hurts my life sucks and you are not making it easy

Me: do you know how much I love you, do you

Her: if you loved me you should have fought for me, you should have chased after me but you most probably enjoyed your life with G

Me: I was out there devastated that the woman I love left me and took my daughter while she is out here opening her legs to the first guy she meets



I saw the shock in her eyes and she tried to fight back the pain

Her: I am not even sure she is your child

Me: I am because I did DNA behind your back. you couldn't even wait until my daughter was a year before you opened your legs. Here I am loving a loose woman you are a whore Amanda

Her: and I no better than you!

I looked at her with tears in my eyes

Her: you ruined my life

She broke down and slid down through the bed

Her: I left you after what Simon did, but in all honesty I couldn't stay because your friend kept dropping hints about you and wendy. You broke his heart and I could see he loved his woman you killed him when you made her pregnant you brought trouble into our lives. I guess I am a sucker for attracting men who bring danger into my life. Now my daughter is gone, I am here shouting at you and I should be with my other children. so yes Lucky I am a whore, a whore who could see danger coming a mile away

Her words stung in my head

Her: I wanted you to find someone your age, someone who doesn't have baggage like me

Me: but my brother Amanda my fucken brother! You are going to break up with him

Him: there will be no such thing

We both looked at him

Him: Lucky she didn't know she is sleeping with brothers

Me: but now she knows and she will do the right thing

I looked at her as tears flowed out

Me: RIGHT AMANDA?

She looked sideways and he walked towards her

Him: that is enough little bro

Unbelievable

Me: so you choosing her over me?

Him: no I am simply telling you to lay off she is broken can you not see that?! She does not need you to be judgemental allow her to heal

Me: I am hurting what about me don't I deserve to be happy?

Him: Lucky please

Me: you know what you two deserve each other a match made in hell. I crazy psycho gun freak and a sex freak I wonder how all this will work out oh I know you are both crazy lunatics I hate you

I turned to Amanda

Me: when all this is done I am taking my daughter with me and you will never see her again understood

She started sobbing loudly in my brother's arms this is so unfair she should be with me in my arms I love her why is she there not here. I also lost my daughter what is wrong with her? Why is she hurting me like this?

Him: Lucky please get out you know I don't like people in my room

I have never been this embarrassed I turned and walked out

\*AMANDA\*

I watched how he left and I hate myself for coming between them, I didn't mean it moreover I didn't even know they were related I didn't know they were brothers. I am a bad person I deserve the tears coming out of my eyes. They don't deserve it. I do I am evil. I am just like Simon I hurt the ones I claim to love oh my God.

I closed my eyes and tried to push the feeling away but I heard my baby crying. My child needs me

Me: do you hear her?

He looked at me

Him: hear who?

Me: my daughter I can hear her

I walked out and looked for her outside only to find another woman carrying a child

Busi: hi I am so sorry

I nodded while she gave the child to Dr van Zyl and she walked to me and I turned around only to bump into Kenny and he wrapped his arms around me

Busi: please I am so sorry

She brushed my back and I felt my whole body failing me

Him: you need to sleep

I shook my head over and over again

Him: Amanda look at me

Me: what if she is dead and haunting me what if...

He picked me up and walked me to the bedroom I wish he would stop doing this, my child. He took me to bathroom and took off my clothes, I felt the water hitting my skin and the steam was clouding us. He tried to walk away to avoid getting wet and I pulled him to me and kissed him. He pushed me back and shook his head

Him: after we found her okay

I shook my head

Me: baby please. Please

He kissed my neck and pulled me to him. I slowly took off his clothes and we shared a kiss, he picked me up and I wrapped my hands around his neck I wanted to forget for a second that I am going crazy, I wanted to forget the pain I caused the two brothers I wanted to forget that my child is missing and that I am missing work. I felt my body ease up as he found his way inside me I let out a soft moan I wanted in I want to feel all of him

Me: baby we need to contact my work

I said this in between my moaning as I was pinned between the glass wall and he was thrusting inside me.

Him: I will sort it out

I stopped him from talking further and planted a kiss on his mouth while the built-in pleasure was coming. I tried to hold on to something and there was nothing to hold on to I left my hand marks through the glass wall as I reached my climax shortly after I felt him come inside of me. I collapsed in his arms and he lifted me to the bedroom and put some lotion on my body and dressed me up

Him: tonight I am fetching our daughter

I lifted my face in shock

Me: did the police find her?

He shook his head

Him: I don't deal well with cops but I need you here

Me: I am coming with you

Him: baby...

Me: no I want to see my daughter. Our daughter when she comes to us. I want to be there

I jumped out and wore my clothes and followed him out and all eyes were on us

Him: she insist on coming

Chace: are you sure

They exchanged weird looks

Him: there is nothing I can do

Chace: let's go now

\*KENNY\*

Having to choose between two people who you love is hard but I need to put boundaries between them. His time is done, it is my time now. I will make an honest woman out of her and my intension for her are real. I didn't mean to take advantage of her in the bathroom but seeing her like that, I don't want her to beg and seek validation from me ever she deserves to be loved and what happened in the bathroom was a mistake. When Chace said let's go I took her hand in mine and I opened my garage

Her: are all these your cars?

I forgot I never introduced her to all my things properly including my dogs

Me: get in and drive I want you to keep a steady head and follow Chace's car okay

I opened my laptop and sent the bastard a bug through an email making it look legit, when it was done in a few minutes he opened it and the bug remained in his phone giving me access to all his information who he was contacting and where. When we arrive I told her to stay in the car. That Karabo woman came to join her and I kissed her forehead

\*AMANDA\*

I watched him walk to the other guys I wanted to join but fear prevented me from going there, while I was talking to Karabo I got to know that she was a sweet woman who like me has been through a lot and has suffered in a name of love and guess who is the course of our problems "MEN" are the reason why we cry we break inside we become weak and emotionally vulnerable.

I looked over at them and saw them take out big guns and my world froze what the hell, I looked at the house and there were many armed men waiting for them

Me: what is going on?

Her: they are going to find your child

While we talked we heard gunshots going off and I screamed taking cover my whole body was shaking. A few moments of silence came and Lucky came out carrying both my daughter and his son and he handed my daughter I held on to her

Me: where is Kenny?

I said this kissing my daughter over and over again. she looked weak and I held her to me I am never letting go of her. Everyone came out except Kenny. I felt pain on my thigh and ignored it

Lucky: Amanda baby you are bleeding

Me: Chace

He looked at me shocked he walked over to me and looked at my thigh which I wasn't worried about

Me: where is he?

He looked around and didn't see Kenny

Him: shit, Mal go back they have Kenny we need to find him

He tried to run back and there was a loud explosion. I froze watching as the building collapsed I couldn't even scream the horror on my face said it all. I gently placed my baby in Karabo's arms and ran to the burning building screaming. I was about to enter when I felt muscular hands drag me back and I looked at this person it was Dr van Zyl and I rested my head on his arms while he rocked me back and forth

Him: he will come we are die hards he has to come

He had tears in his eyes and looked at the burning building.

Mal: he is here!

We rushed to where he was pointing out and we found him laying there. An ambulance came and they wheeled him in I got in the car after Chace took out the bullet and I was screaming as he did this, I was with my baby just holding her and Karabo decided to drive us to Kenny's home and I called my mother. I hope Kenny get well, he can't die on me I need him. I love him he is the one for me

\*CHAPTER 30\*

A week passed and I only visited Kenny twice that week I was afraid I was going to lose him so I adjusted to life without him and it felt like I was neglecting my kids I didn't want to be separated from them at all. I devoted myself to spend time with them.

In just a few days I was away from them it seemed like they have changed more so Mpilo I could notice the changes in her she would cling on to me and wouldn't allow anyone around her without me just to show that children do suffer from posttraumatic stress disorder. Mpho made sure to buy me my anti-depressants from his pocket money.

I woke up early to make breakfast for everyone and they came to join me

Mpho: morning ma

I kissed them good morning and gave them food while I fed Mpilo any slight disturbing noise like a bang she would jerk her body in response

Naledi: mama can we talk

I nodded and joined them

Mpho: this is not healthy mama

Me: what?

Him: us missing school for a week because you are afraid of losing us

I bent my head down

Him: it is not meant in a bad way and mama please promise me you will never stop taking your meds please

Me: I promise

Him: good. Now I want you to listen to me carefully next week Naledi and I are going to school

Her: please ma I love you and all but school is important and we need it

Me: I am sorry I understand

While talking a knock came on the door and I stood up to check who it was, when I opened Dr van Zyl's wife Busi came in with a tall man

Busi: hello sorry for dropping in so early

Me: no problem

Her: please meet my friend Nkosi he can be helpful at times

Him: hello

Me: hi

I smiled at him as I welcomed them in after sharing hugs and my children excused themselves except for Mpilo of course she has no choice

Her: how are you holding up?

I took my medication and handed them plates full of food for breakfast

Me: I am trying

She nodded in acknowledgement and I sat down to join them

Him: sorry for being forward but good Lord what happened to your hair?

As much as I was to be offended

Mpho: I told her three days ago but o babez never listens

He said this as he came down to put the plates in the sink and we all laughed this child is a gift

Him: wena all you need to do is force her to the salon

Mpho: don't worry I brought irelaxer just in case she decides the salon is too far

Me: yeah I take the salon anytime of the day

He laughed and disappeared as he went to their room

Her: wow I love your relationship with your son

Me: I raised a man there

We talked some more and another knock came in while Busi was playing with my daughter I opened the door and Karabo came in

Karabo: hi

I greeted her exchanging hugs and she walked in

Karabo: I am here to see my niece

I directed her to the lounge where we were sitting and they all exchanged greetings and hugs

Nkosi: hayi muhn sitting here I feel like I am sitting with three broken women

I looked at his shocked

Karabo: you don't know the half of it

Busi: really?

Karabo: I am married to a man who has more than 15 personalities

Busi: you lie

Me: how are you coping with all of that?

Karabo: there was a three year gap where I gave up on him, he listened to his brother's bad influence

Me: where is the brother?

Karabo: he won't tell me

Busi: hai your life is drama girl

Karabo: you know. I taught him how to control his feelings because he is afraid of feeling and causes some personalities to slip up. prior to meeting him I was involved with a guy who was interested in only stealing my company he kidnapped me and raped me so that I could sign my shares to him and I stubborn as I am I refused

Busi: what is wrong with these men and raping their women?

Me: it's like they have some sick twisted fantasy of relieving themselves while breaking the souls of people around them

Karabo: I have learned to take life as it comes. Oh and the brother was the source of most of our trouble because he was obsessed with me and he took all of Mandla's girlfriends except for me

I nodded

Karabo: and I nearly killed someone because of him

Nkosi: see just one and the same people

Busi playfully hit him

Karabo: what are you talking about?

Him: take it away bubu

Busi: wa phapha serious. Anyway I was raised by my aunt thinking she was my actual mom

Karabo: oh my word I was raised by my adopted parents only to find out the father was my actual father and my adopted mother was using me as a strategy she didn't have a child with my father so she adopted me to be her son's wife only to find out she wanted the grandchild to be the one connecting her to my father



We all clapped hands when we heard this

Busi: mamela ke she stole me from my mother after she signed the contract that she will give her child to my dad. My dad slept with two sister, as time goes by I found out Chace's baby mama is my half sister

Me: no

Busi: she was obsessed with him and it was deep. My ex is another story he murder our first born inside of me while I was pregnant he beat me up saying I was ruining his life mind you I was 15 he was 19 and I really thought he was the one. He created a condition for me not to have easy pregnancy. I was a druggie thanks to him. He also raped me on my first time sleeping with him, I didn't accept it, that is how much I loved him he was the one or so I thought until Chace came into my life. Oh and the bastard rejected my child when he was born because he had a weird condition that made him look like he didn't have a face

Me: how is your child now?

Busi: he is fine now my mother took him to surgery when I was in a coma for three months. Don't worry about Kenny you will be fine. you know when my triplets were a couple of months old and Theo was 1 they told me Chace was dead and it broke me so badly

Me: what?

Karabo: and then what happened

Busi: he came back and pretended as if nothing went wrong

Why am I sensing there is more to the story and she is not letting on

Busi: and there was a time I was kidnapped by a guy obsessed with me while I was seven months pregnant and chace left me for five fucken years alone I was on the verge of divorcing him and boom he came back while I was trying to move on with a sweet decent guy. I thought I was a booty call but we fixed this. He got involved with a psycho who tried to steal my young baby but I caught her and accidentally killed her

The way I could relate to these woman I couldn't even zone out, I realised I wasn't the only facing shit and watching them now carrying on gave me a few courage to tackle life as it comes

Karabo: and you sleeping with two brothers?

Nkosi: and I heard you were in prison

I guess it was my turn I didn't mean to sleep with two brothers I didn't even know they were related. And as for Simon mxm, so I began narrating my whole story to them and they looked shocked and had encouraging words

Me: with all these sob stories we need wine

Nkosi: yes girl now you are talking we need this wine we need to wash away this depression you brought to me just now

We laughed and I came back carrying four glasses and a bottle for wine I poured for all of us and Mpilo slept in Karabo's arms I rested her on an empty chair and we continued with our conversation man it felt good just connecting with anyone who is not Anele or who won't offer me sex in exchange for my feelings

Busi: well I don't know Lucky but I do know Kenny and he is a good guy very loving and beautiful heart, he puts everyone before him and that is what I love about him so I wont tell you who to choose only your heart knows

Karabo: well I don't know Kenny but I know Lucky and he is a good kid just he can be childish at times and make a couple of mistakes, you know when we met he didn't even know the sex of his child he thought he was a girl

I laughed at this

Karabo: I am serious he was like "I have a daughter and I would do anything for her"

We high fived just laughing Lucky is seriously crazy I give up on him

Nkosi: he takes the cup

Karabo: I also won't tell you who to choose that all depends on your heart

Busi: oh man this wine is good

Nkosi: honey go wash and get dressed and go see your man

Me: Kenny needs me but my kids

Busi: the aunties are here

Me: thank you I just don't want anything to happen

Busi: I am Chace's wife trust me if anything happens they are dead

Karabo: and I am a psycho's wife they don't want to see a personality called John

We all laughed these ladies are crazy and I took a proper shower got dressed and fixed my hair I really needed to do my hair so I wore a beanie to hide the shame. When I walked out they were still talking and they stopped when they saw me

Busi: you look beautiful so is it for Kenny or Lucky?

That question caught me off guard and they were waiting for an answer from me

Me: it is for the love of my life

I winked than walked out leaving them with a hanging answer, I got in Kenny's car and drove to the hospital I love that car excuse me for loving beautiful things but that car is everything. when I arrived I fixed my make-up and I was anxious what if he never wakes up and I am always there for him but he never response. I built up the courage and walked in the hospital to his ward and to his bed. I got in and met eyes with Lucky

Him: hello

I faked smiled and greeted him back he looked like he hasn't been sleeping at all

Me: how is Sandile?

Him: he is alright. How is my daughter?

Me: she is alright. Is there any improvement on Kenny?

He shook his head and I sat on the chair next to Kenny opposite Lucky and we fell in an uncomfortable silence. I couldn't talk to both of them in the same room

Him: I will give you privacy

I nodded

Him: and I am sorry for all the things I said

Me: me too

He stood up and touched his brother the same time I tried to touch Kenny and our hands connected he looked at me I moved my hand from him and he smiled walking out. After he left I stood up and gave Kenny a kiss in the mouth asking him to wake up and that I miss him. The door opened and Chace walked in to check on him. He gave me a hug and looked at me

Him: are you okay?

I nodded

Him: good, why aren't you at work?

Me: I was laid off

Him: oh so you have free time

I nodded

Him: good I need a favour from you

Me: what?

Him: I want you to take care of Kenny's files and businesses can you do that?

Me: my baby?

Him: that is the joy of being a boss you can come with your baby and spin in the office chair with her

Me: wow so that is the only fun part

He chuckled

Me: I cannot wait to spin on that chair

He laughed

Him: and you need to go and feed his puppies

Me: he has dogs?

He took out his phone and showed me the dog

Me: Chace those things are not puppies

He laughed

Him: they are a couple of months old I can introduce them to you

Me: they will have to wait for him to heal I am sorry I value my life I will not be bitten by big dogs referred to as puppies

He laughed and I moved closer to Kenny holding his hand, he applied pressure to it

Me: Chace he is walking up

He moved to him and smiled

Him: he is indeed

Kenny opened his eyes and I hugged him tightly while he groaned

Me: I missed you

He smiled and I rested my head on his shoulder

Kenny: you are not getting rid of me that easily I am here to stay beautiful

## CHAPTER 31\*

I didn't want to let him go and he wiped the tears of my face I really thought I lost him and that he would not make it. I didn't want to lose him ever

Him: hey stop it I am awake now

Chace: and I am glad you are awake I will leave you two and tell your bro you are awake

Me: Ken

I whispered in his ear and looked into his eyes and planted a kiss on his face

Him: I guess I should go through this all the time

I smiled

Me: if you died I would have burned your body after stabbing you, you made me fall for you and now you wanted to leave me huh? You were not going to have a peaceful death. You are definitely stuck with me for life

He chuckled and made me smile and he wrapped his arms around me

Him: I would be there haunting you. But you are true on the last part say baby did you gain weight?

I punched him gently while he laughed

Me: now I have to go and take care of your business

Him: why?

Me: I was laid off more like gently fired from work so Chace asked me. and why wasn't I told about the dogs?

Him: I am sorry you were fired and my babies I keep them caged most of the time but I am sure they will live you

Me: it doesn't matter I was not focused either way I don't want to be separate from my children, and you should allow those dogs to be free

Him: but here you are, lets forget about the dogs for now

Me: well Busi is with my children

He made space and I sat on it and he brushed my thighs and we talked we interlocked our hands and we were looking at each other. the door opened and Lucky came in looked at us and left. I felt bad that he has to face this

Me: I didn't mean to come between you maybe he is right we should cool things down

He shook his head

Him: I know it hurts as hell but you are not going anyway I want you next to me until I die

I smiled and I left around 5pm, I got home and found the ladies with my children

They handed Mpilo to me and they left I put her down and she looked scared to even crawl I left her there and started making dinner. When I was done we all ate and I slept with my baby she was clinging to her teddy and it broke my heart I kissed her forehead and pulled her closer to me. I woke up in the morning and walked to the kitchen with Mpilo and found breakfast made already and my kids wearing school uniform

Me: I thought you are going next week

Mpho: no thank you I called uber and it will be here in a few minutes I took cash from your purse and divided it between me and Naledi

Her: mom now that you are without work are we going to be broke

Me: no I have some investments I made and they will last us a lifetime including the money your father lost during the divorce settlement and I can sell our house in KZN

Her: okay

She looked down

Me: hey don't look so worried I got this figured out okay

We shared a hug and they left me, I took a shower with my child and drove to Kenny's house I looked out for the dogs and I guess they were caged so cruel so I walked in and went to his bedroom and I found his laptop when I walked out I bumped into Gertrude and she told me Kenny has a study were he kept his documents and I went there and took some files and drove to the restaurant

Nancy: hello ma'am table for one

I smiled and shook my head

Me: no thank you I will be in the office the whole day I just need books for this restaurant

She nodded and walked to the counter while I walked into his office apply the skill I acquired for doing 3 years in accounting in collage during the time I couldn't get a job from my degree, yeah I was a book nerd and I have two degrees one in accounting and another in food tech.

I tried to open his laptop and it was locked, I took out my phone and called Kenny his phone went straight to voicemail. I called Lucky and asked for Chace's numbers after he hung up I felt a lump on my throat and I called Chace he answered after 3 missed calls

Me: hello Dr van Zyl this is Amanda

He chuckled

Him: is it so difficult to call me Chace

I smiled

Me: okay Chace can you please help me I need to access Kenny's laptop

He chuckled

Him: okay it has to be something he loves try Laila his mother and if it's not her than it is your name

Me: let me try my name

I did and it didn't work

Me: nope I guess Laila it is

He laughed and I opened it using his mother's name

Me: is it not an easy password

Him: nope because nobody knows about his mother

Me: oh

I guess he will have to tell me more about her. while busy on the laptop I found some files and Chace was still on the line

Me: Chace should I open the files written Horns?

Him: NO!

ME: okay and this one written Wong?

Him: don't touch those files

Me: but...

Him: promise me you wont touch those files

Me: what do they contain?

I thought I heard him run on the background curiosity was invading my mind

Me: hello

Him: Kenny please don't be mad I gave Amanda access to your laptop and I didn't know you left the files out

Kenny: give me the phone. Hi baby

Me: hey what is going on?

Him: I think you should tell her

Kenny: honey those files are corrupt and contain viruses that could crush my laptop

Me: oh okay

Him: you believe that

Me: yeah shouldn't I believe it?

I knew he was lying, Mpilo started crying and I gave her the bottle while talking to Kenny

Me: so which files should I open?

He told me the files I should open. After he hung up I put Mpilo on the floor and she played with her toys and I started working on his things and he had more cash than what the business are generating am I mean millions more than he should have. An email came in for him containing R30m transaction from this Wong person, I tried to click on it when the door opened and that Ntombizodwa girl came in she closed the laptop and snatched it from me

Me: can I help you?

Her: what are you doing with Kenny's stuff he doesn't want people to touch his laptop

I stood up and walked towards her

Me: well he has given me access is there a problem

Her: he has never given anyone access ever

Me: I am not just anyone I am his one

She laughed at my face

Her: you are nothing but a rebound he is mine and mine alone we have been through a lot together

She walked towards the door to leave

Me: good for you but you are the past not and I am his future you know what is sad women cheating on good men and having a tough time to move on because they found out the men they ran to are trash. You broke his heart and I mended it

She walked to me

Her: you don't know what you are talking about



Me: he told me everything you are nothing but a loose skirt claiming to love him

I took the laptop from her and put it on the desk my daughter was just looking at us she had a sad face and I knew she was about to cry I walked over to her and picked her up and brushed her back while I point the door for this woman to leave

Me: leave you are upsetting our daughter

She laughed

Her: we both know she is not his daughter

Me: he risked his life for our daughter now please leave and go back to the man who you cheated with

I was about to turn when I felt a hot slap on my face causing my daughter to scream someone got in between us and it was Lucky

Him: zodwa leave!

Her: why me?

Him: now!

She turned to walk away

Me: and I hope you enjoyed that slap because I am sure as hell it wont happen ever again

She continued walking laughing at the same time

Him: are you okay that slap looks painful

Me: I am fine!

I snapped at him and apologised that was uncalled for

Him: I brought you lunch I thought you might need it after my brother told me you are working here

Me: thank you

He took my crying baby and held her in his arms playing with her and calmed down a little before laughing with him and I eat

Me: are you no longer working

Him: nope I resigned when my brother told me to move here permanently

I nodded my head

Him: that was before we knew you were dating him

Me: oh about that I am really sorry

He smiled

Him: it is chilled, beside I realised I would rather have you as a friend than not have you at all

I looked down

Me: I guess I owe you a lot for leaving like that but in all honesty our relationship was not great we fought a lot after you know

He nodded

Me: I think you deserve a life with someone younger and who understands you

Him: I wanted you

Me: I know but I was always conscious of our age gap and you calling me mama wethu even in public was weird for me making me feel old

He nodded

Him: you know we deserve a break

Me: we? Why? And where?

Him: Durban to relax after the kidnapping of our daughter

I shook my head I don't want anything to do with KwaZulu-Natal

Him: no listen close your eyes, please just trust me

I closed my eyes waiting to see where all of this is going

Him: imagine this you at the beach the water splashing your feet, the sand slowly massaging your body, the wind caressing your skin and the sun giving you a much needed tan not you are pale. Me carrying Mpilo and us playing in the water her wearing a little bathing swimsuit, Mpho and Naledi swimming enjoying the beach

Me: and where is Kenny in all of this?

I opened my eyes and he was close to my face smiling his breath hit my face, I cleared my throat and pushed him away gently

\*LUCKY\*

They say you need to fight for what you love I realised it is all fair in love and war and I wanted to remind her of how we met even if it means taking her back to that office I don't mind. She will be mine again. This was just a trick to get to her being close to her again made me realise how much I love her. this is just the first step

## CHAPTER 32\*

\*AMANDA\*

At 4 I told Lucky I had to go and see Kenny and I thanked him for his company he looked sad and disappointed in my statement, I just wish there was a way to ease his pain

Him: let's go together since I am also going there

I looked at him and shrugged my shoulders

Him: okay how about this you go and leave me with Mpilo

Me: Lucky

Him: please this will give me time to bond with my child, I mean I lost so much time with her and Kenny's house is safer than your own home

I looked at my baby and he was right, I never gave him a chance to be with his daughter and robbed them of the father daughter relationship. She deserves to know her true father. I nodded and gave him her stuff

Me: she usually has supper at six and bathes at 7 for bedtime she loves cuddling her teddy when she sleeps or she won't sleep at all ever since you know...

I pointed her teddy to him

Him: anything else? Is she allergic to something?

Me: I haven't test her for allergies but thus far nope, and I think she is contracting flu so please I have packed some medication for her give them to her

He nodded and carried her, when we got to my car I took out the car seat and took it to his car

Me: where is Sandile?

Him: with Gertrude he is still confused a little

Me: I understand when is the funeral for his mother?

Him: we buried her already this past week and it was tough

I nodded it must be hard for a three year old to start life all over again losing everything like that

Him: oh and Simon is back in prison my brother....

Me: I don't care about anything that has to do with Simon. Speaking of did you hurt him is that why he is in hospital because he told my daughter that and I told her there is no way you would do that, she hated me for weeks thinking you are the one who hurt her father

He took Mpilo inside and looked at me

Him: no

After his answer he rushed to the driver's car and got in driving off. I got in my car and drove to the hospital when I went in his room I found him shirtless showing his muscles and packs I envied his body and I saw some tattoos on his back I never really observed them before. He was doing push ups on the floor

Me: is it safe to do this?

He stopped and walked towards me burying his head between my neck which tickled and I laughed while he continued blowing his breath and he dragged me to the bed and he looked at me

Him: hey Amy

I smiled at the way he calls me because I am pretty sure Amy and Amanda are two different names

Me: Ken

Him: Kenny

Me: I want ken I want to be the only one to call you that

He smiled and kissed my lips

Him: okay amy you can call me ken. Anyway tell me about your day

Me: I will. I see you packed your bags

Him: yeah I am being discharged tomorrow

Me: you just woke up from you coma

Him: Chace is here if anything should happen

Me: why are we gambling with your health do you want to die and leave me on my own Kenny do you know how broken I will be without you do you know how much I love you rejecting your brother because I am in love with an idiot?

He chuckled leaving me pissed

Him: I am sorry but I have been through shit this is nothing

I looked at him what has he been through

Me: shit like?

His muscles tensed up a little

Him: where is Mpilo?

He said this to avoid answering me

Me: don't change the question

Him: I am just worried about her I don't want anything to happen to her and her siblings hence I gave Mpho my driver's contact and told him to tell you it was uber

Me: Lucky asked to have some time with her

Him: so you guys are talking now?

Me: something like that

We kept quiet for a bit

Him: so did you open the files?

Me: you told me not to and when I was about to open your email from Wong with R30m your girlfriend bugged in shouting at me and she even slapped me she was lucky I was carrying Mpilo and then Lucky came to stop us and he stayed with me the whole day. That is how he got to have Mpilo for now until I fetch her

Him: hmm

Me: and I will drive home afterwards

He looked at with his eyes half closed his expression stone cold

Me: you can relax I will never do anything to hurt you ken

I planted a kiss on his lips and he returned the kiss

Him: I have to make sure of it now don't I?

I smiled while he said this and he picked me up and threw me on the bed and sucked on my neck leaving marks

Him: don't worry I trust you Amy

Mal: oh get a room you guys

We quickly sat up

Him: we are in my room aren't we?

He smiled shaking his head, he took my hand and kissed it

Mal: how are you?

Me: I am good thanks and yourself?

Mal: couldn't be better I never got to welcome you properly to the family that night so give me a big bro little sis hug

I looked at Kenny and he nodded I walked to him and hugged him, I returned next to Kenny

Mal: by the way please call me Mal not my full name or surname

I smiled and nodded Chace came in and they had a little celebration in the room these people are beyond crazy. I left the hospital at 8 and drove to Kenny's house and took my daughter didn't converse much with Lucky and drove straight home I found my kids sleeping on the couch and I woke them up

Naledi: mommy can I sleep with you?

I nodded and we walked together I slept with all of them. I called my mother to come and help me out with the kids tomorrow

\*KENNY\*

That night we went to the rescue mission I saw one of the guys aiming the gun towards the ladies and a gunshot I don't know which lady got shot I wanted to go back but they stopped me and this angered Mandla to the point that one of his personalities slipped out one I have never seen before. We got in and killed almost all the men in that house Chace planted a bomb in the house. G tried to hurt my brother who was about to reach Sandile and I shot him nobody but me will ever hurt my little bro, we took the kids and I handed Mpilo to Lucky. After I handed Mpilo to Lucky I was about to leave the house when G insulted Amanda calling her a whore moving between brothers I knew I couldn't just let her honour be defiled like that, I punched him a couple of time and kicked him unconscious I even forgot about the bomb we planted in there, when it reached 7 seconds I knew I had to leave through the back door but the explosion pushed me hard and my head hit something that is the last thing I remember and everything became black.

When she came in to see me my heart was aching I just wish nothing happened with Lucky, Nancy told me about the fight between her and Ntombizodwa and that Lucky came to her rescue to stop the fight and that he locked the door winking at her as she was about to walk in. I guess he is not over Amanda and I really don't want her to be stuck between us as much as I will fight for her and be with her, the matters of the heart are complex issues and with a baby involved I can only fight for so long given that they also share a long history

When she came in and the look of affection beamed on her face I knew she hadn't done anything, when she confessed to what happened I knew she didn't do what I thought I knew she was starting to be devoted to me. If she decides that she loves my younger

brother I will allow it although it hurts the best thing to do for the person you love is to let them be with the one they love. I just hope it never reaches that stage with my Amy my Amanda as Mal calls us Kanda I dont know why I only contribute K.

I slept easy knowing that my woman loves me I will repeat this she loves me she showed it with her eyes. I woke up in the morning and got dressed. Chace came in with Arthur and they examined me one last time and discharged me

Me: Arthur when are we seeing Lerato it has been a while?

Him: we are having issues especially with the fact the she can't have kids it is killing her I tried but I am losing her she even resigned Chace and I tried to change her mind but to no avail

Chace: you can have my Fortunate if you want

He smiled through the pain in his eyes

Him: thank you but I am fine with just us two I hope she accepts this I hate seeing her broken the way she is. I tried proposing surrogacy but still

I know what he was feeling it is how I feel looking at Amanda she is broken and hurting and I hate that fact

Chace: we are here for you, if you want I can ask Busi to talk to her

He shook his head we continued talking and they walked out I finished dressing and the door opened she came in grinning like a five year old and I hugged her before we shared a kiss, I broke the kiss and kissed my baby Mpilo she really was adorable

Me: get me out of here

Her: we are going home baby

We drove to my house and her kids were there to welcome me home

Mpho: uncle Kenny thank you for rescuing our little sister

I kneeled down and looked at him

Me: there isn't anything I wouldn't do for you, beside you were taking care of your family as well

They smiled and both gave me a hug

Me: you are all welcome, I am starving is there food?

They laughed and Amanda gave me food and we ate talking

Me: where is Lucky?

I whispered to Amanda

Her: I don't know he left before we came here

Mpho: this house is huge is there a man cave?

I smiled

Me: what kind of man will I be if I didn't have that cave?

He looked excited

Him: really?

Me: we can go there is you want

Amanda: after eating

Him: mama please

Her: I don't mind just after eating

Naledi: can I join?

Me: you are more than welcome

She smiled and we finished eating I took them to my entertainment room and they sat in front of the huge tv and played some games, Mpilo was on my lap and I showed Naledi how to play and we ended up ganging up on Mpho with us winning until Mpilo started nagging and I left them there. Amy gave her a bath and some medication before went to my "cave" to remind our kids there is school

Me: remember there is school tomorrow

Amanda: and my mother is here to fetch them

Him: ma can we please stay here for the night please

She shook her head

Her: it is time to go my babies

Me: I don't mind your mother can stay here as well

She closed her eyes and walked out, we were all down and she came back with a smile

Her: she agreed but she wants you two in bed and baby why are you still up it is past your bedtime

She took Mpilo from and in an attempt to make her sleep and she succeeded and she went to our bedroom and put the sleeping baby with her teddy on my bed. I went to the



bathroom to refresh when I came out she did the same I climbed the bed and she returned joining us on the bed

Her: you know babe your brother proposed something

It irritated me when she said that

Her: relax would you, he told me that I deserve a holiday and we should go to Durban but I am done with that place I never want to go back there ever again people there backstabbed me and hurt me and left me with ugly scares that run deep, I have been trying to have a positive change in my life, as much as I hate to admit it you are a positive start in my life and thank you for coming into my life thank you for waiting one month before you know

I laughed when she said that and kissed the back of her hand trying not to wake up Mpilo

Me: you are welcome my love, and I want you to remember that you deserve more than you got in your life and I will make sure you get all the good things in life although I know you are not here for the material thing but I know you deserve them my Cleopatra. And do remember I love you

Her: I love you too

I held her hand and continued looking up as much as I hate to admit it Lucky is right she does deserve a holiday she deserves to find herself and heal emotional. She turned to face the other way after we said goodnight to each other, leaving me in my thoughts. I woke up and found the email she was talking about and it was Mr Wong he deals in rhino horns which we have to find I forwarded the email to Chace telling him, I know where we could find Horns and they were with a guy called Jetro so I hacked into his personal stuff looking for information and I discovered he is meeting his contacts three days from now meaning we can hijack the deal by then. After sending the files I closed my laptop and prepared to sleep but I sat up again something has been bothering me and I had to sort it out.

Now how to deal with Simon he has to pay for what he has done and as for Anele I have a special treat for her so sweet she will never forget it. I looked at Amanda and she was dead tired. I made a call to a friend to prison

Him: Kenny

Me: Simon Tshetlo get him you know what to do

Him: thank you boss I have been craving for some fresh...

Me: I don't want to hear it make it as painful as possible I want him to be scarred so deep that he drives himself insane and commits suicide

He chuckled and hung up while I looked at Amanda

Me: baby I promise I will always be here for you, I will never be too far for you or busy for you I will be there to catch you when you fall whether we together or not I will always be there whenever you call me

I caressed her face with my finger and kissed her lips, she returned the kiss I could feel tears dripping to my mouth she was crying I just hope she is sleeping and she didn't hear what I said I am not ready to disclose my life to her just yet I want her to trust me enough first if she know everything will change for the worse

## CHAPTER 33\*

\*LUCKY\*

Nothing beats looking at the woman you love the mother of your child playing happy families with another man. When she told me my brother is coming and she started cooking dinner I couldn't take it anymore I took my son and went out to join Gertrude my brother's maid. I knew where she lives and that she has a thing with the gardener but she deserves better. I asked her to look after Sandile for me while I went to a club to de-stress. I kept the drinks flowing and I don't know how I made it back to Gertrude's house, I knocked on her door and she opened she was wearing a short pink nightdress with matching slippers and a gown, she tried to hid it but it was too late I couldn't help it I dragged her to me and planted a kiss, she was surprised and returned it.

Me: Sandile?

Her: in my room

I picked her up and took her to the couch and stripped her naked kissing her and finally I inserted myself in her. I wanted to get rid of any images of Amanda from my head but she was still invading my mind. Everything we used to do invaded my mind, I could hear Gertrude moaning and moving under me, but I was not done with my thoughts I wanted to get rid of Amanda.

I woke up next to her my head was pounding. I kept touching it and looked at Gertrude and she was crying silently

Me: hey

She looked at me and looked away shyly

Me: I am sorry did I hurt you?

She shook her head and stood up I held her hand and dragged her to me and she sat next to me

Her: I am scared what if Mr Kenny found us? What if Dan finds out? The sad thing is it didn't feel wrong being with you

I looked at her and wiped her tears away

Me: I am sorry I shouldn't have crossed the line with you

Her: do you want breakfast?

Me: nope I will take my son and shower home so your boyfriend doesn't find us here

She nodded and I kissed her cheek, I stood up and took Sandile when I walked out she gave me two headache tablets and we bid goodbye to each other. I got in my car and drove to my brother's house I saw her children being transported to school. I got in and sneaked to my bedroom to put the sleeping Sandile on my bed. I went to my car and I took the two pills to drink in the kitchen when I got there I found her cooking breakfast listening to Billy Ocean Suddenly and she was singing along wearing only his shirt and her bum was showing, I don't get why she could be this happy while I am craving her missing her. I felt myself gravitate towards her I wanted to stop myself I had to until....

\*AMANDA\*

I felt two arms around me and I quickly turned around only to be met by a kiss and he lifted me up and made me sit on the kitchen counter while he got between my thighs

Him: who said I wanted breakfast when there could be one thousand things we could do

Me: as if you would last

He chuckled

Me: beside I am already slaving in your kitchen

Him: oh yeah this is my house we need to get another house

I laughed at this

Him: what don't you think I can buy a new house?

Me: this one is perfect don't change because I am here

Him: who said I wanted to change because of you

My mouth formed a perfect o and he kissed me still

Me: where is Mpilo?

Him: your mother found us playing on my bed and she took her chanting this is not right and shaking her head

He pouted and looked down

Me: I am so sorry I will have a word with her

He rested his head on my chest and ran my fingers through his head, he lifted his head and kissed me while his hand caressed my thigh, I wanted to remove his hand and tell him there are people in here but he didn't bother to stop and continued to stroke me until his hand went under his shirt which I was wearing and he stopped and looked at me

Me: what?

He chuckled

Him: no underwear not even a bra?

Me: I was doing all this for you, I want you to have breakfast and desert in the morning

He hungrily brought his lips to mine and pushed me closer to his crotch he was about to take down his boxers when we heard my mother shouting my name. She entered the kitchen and walked away fast while we laughed. He helped me down and I walked to the bedroom and wore my tights before joining my mother

Me: morning ma

Her: morning baby

She had the look of disappointment on her face

Her: how are you?

Me: I am good and you?

I didn't notice I was silent until she asked me that question

Her: I am good just not okay, I wanted to talk to you but I knew that day Mpilo was kidnapped but it was not appropriate so today it is

Me: what is wrong ma?

Her: everything baby. You moving here and finding a new man leaving everyone behind

I looked at her

Her: you are proving the Tshetlo's right when they say you are loose I mean I am starting to believe that you really did have sex outside the gate of your house. Amanda you are 40 and a mother to three kids and you are behaving like a love sick teenager can you please get yourself together. And this introducing your children to different men is not the right it is confusing and wrong

Her words hit me a bit

Me: mama for six months I have been on my own living my life with my children not having sex just me and my kids, you know what is sad people judging me and hurting me, where were you mama when I moved here breaking and picking myself up? Nobody called to ask me are you okay Amanda? How are you Amanda? I was the one who fought to keep contact with all of you. Where is lizzy? I call her she never called me. I sent all of you my new contacts and nobody bothered to check on me nobody bothered to come and see me.

She wiped the tear that dropped from my eye

Me: I even reached out to Lucky and he never reached out to me and when I found this man it is wrong. He makes me feel good he loves me and he got me to confess my love to him. He respects me and he didn't rush to sleep with me. When Naledi didn't talk to me he and mpho met up and created a plan where we could talk and fix things between us. He never judged me and took advantage of me he is my support system and my safe heaven mama I love him. He supported me in ways I never knew someone could. Not even Simon could do the things he did for me. He risked his life for my daughter imagine that if that is not love than I don't know your definition of love

She looked at me with tears in her eyes as well and it hurt me seeing her cry

Her: I am sorry you survived six months without me, I love you baby. And if you say he makes you happy well than I guess I need to have a word with him and if he turns out to be like Simon I will skin him alive I promise I will

We shared a laugh and she hugged me no matter what I could never have bad blood with my mother ever

Her: my baby you need to talk to your father he needs to know you are fine and the man you have loves you

Me: he satisfy me in all ways

Her: he must be gifted to have you hooked like this

I laughed and blushed

Me: mama

Her: haai we all know where babies come from

She winked at me

Her: but serious baby please be careful okay and I hate how you allow a guy in your life like this do you know what he does for a living?

Me: I do I think

I wasn't sure if I did

Her: I love you okay I hope he doesn't play with your heart

Me: another thing mama

Her: what?

Me: he is Lucky's older brother

She sat up and looked at me

Her: so what will Mpilo call him uncle baba?

I looked down when she said that

Her: did you tell Lucky?

Me: he lives here with us

Her: do you know the pain you are causing the poor guy? The man who rescued you, who put you first and himself later

Me: ken does that as well

Her: ai this is not going to end well baby I have a feeling you are asking for trouble at least don't act all lovey dovey around him

Me: I will try mama

Her: are sure about Ken though?

Me: I pray and hope he is the right one

We shared a hug again

Him: and I promise I will make an honest woman out of her one day

We both sat up and looked at him

Me: where do you come from?

Him: I was walking in either way

He sat next to me and winked

Him: Mama Ndzimande I know that you love your daughter with all your life and I promise I won't hurt her you can trust me

I smiled when he said this he spoke in perfect Zulu and my mother was shocked to hear him speaking Zulu and eventually relaxed a little

Him: can you excuse me while I go and talk to your daughter in the bedroom

She smiled

Her: keep it down Mpilo is playing just next door

We walked to the bedroom and closed the door, he locked the door and threw the key on the bed I felt his lips smash into mine and picked me up and threw me on the bed he got on top of me, I wrapped my legs around him and looked into his eyes

Him: you were crying last night when I kissed you what happened?

I don't remember crying but I remember having a weird dream and I do remember waking up to the kiss and how much I wanted him

Me: I don't know what you are talking about but I know this

I pulled him closer for a kiss we slowly undressed each other and trailed his kiss all over my body, his lips met with my sacred passage, I was lost in my own little world I even forgot about my dreams the satisfaction he gave to my soul was enough. Next thing I felt him enter my womanhood and man I missed this I missed him with my all. He cuddled next to when he was done and turned to me smiling

Me: what?

Him: you know I hate to admit it but Lucky is right about the holiday

I looked at him

Him: well when the school closes I am taking you and the kids on a much needed vacation that you deserve

I was couldn't utter a word to him

Him: I want you to have a vacation you won't regret. I want you to enjoy it and the kids have been traumatised enough, from their father to you and other men in your life I think they can use with a break

Me: you are so concerned about my kids

Him: our kids and they should always come first I know how it feels to come second to someone you love

He kissed my forehead and got up. Pulling me by my legs and put me over his shoulder while I giggled and as he walked to the bathroom with me and he put me down in the shower and he opened the taps we got under the water as it splash us. The whole day went by fast and I decided to have an early rest my feet were killing me. I slept immediately after my head landed on the pillow.

I kept having a weird scary dream I was alone scared and sweating I was shaking and thinking about the future of my children and how they will survive with Kenny, I kept thinking about everything that was going wrong in my life. I was so scared thinking this is it my time has come and it was almost close to my death, I felt something cold close to my head and I cried out loudly begging for my life when I noticed it was a gun pressed against my head. Weird thing I was holding the gun nobody was forcing me but there was a presence with me an angry presence and next thing I heard a loud bang

I woke up screaming and Kenny held me close to him and wiped the sweat from my forehead and Mpilo woke up screaming and Ken picked her up as well he tried his best to calm the both of us. The dream felt so real like my life was almost done

Me: I am fine I need fresh air

I walked out and went to the bar and found a bottle of wine pouring a glass for me

Lucky: can't sleep?

I looked at him and nodded

Me: you?

Him: I just got here

Me: need a glass

He shook his head and his eyes met those of his brother's

Him: anyway goodnight

I smiled and he walked away and ken joined me he watched me sipping my drink and I explained the whole dream to him and he told me it is just a dream. Something about this dream doesn't sit well with me I think it is the talk I had with my mother about me hurting one of the brothers



## CHAPTER 34\*

I woke up in the morning and Kenny was not next to us, I looked at my daughter and kissed her forehead she was still pretty much asleep I remembered last night's dream and I kneeled down and said a little prayer to God asking him to prevent whatever harm that may be planted my way. I got up went to the bathroom took a quick shower and got dressed, I walked out and looked for Kenny and found him in his indoor gym. He was running on the treadmill and sweating with earphone in his ears

Me: Kenny!

He didn't hear me he kept punching and I left him there and went to the kitchen to make a little breakfast for all of us. After I was done I set the table and waited for everyone to wake up. My mother came to join me she is forced to stay here because my children don't want to go back to my house apparently it is not as "cool" as Uncle Kenny's house.

Her: morning baby

Me: morning ma, I need to go and check on Mpilo I will be back

She nodded and dished up for herself while I went to the bedroom and found her on the bed playing with Kenny it looks like she was crying

Me: hi

He looked up and smiled

Him: did you sleep well?

Me: yes thank you

Him: good to hear that

Me: I was thinking tomorrow we should go to church to strengthen our relationship

Him: me and church

He winked and walked to the bathroom while I picked her up she was getting heavy and chubby by the day. I walked to the bathroom as well and ken was in the shower while I ran the water in the bathtub just warm and low enough to allow her to play in it. After we were done I went to the kitchen and found everyone sitting there except for Lucky and Sandile. Kenny took a shake instead of food and when we finished I did the dishes. My phone rang and I answered it

Keegan: hey stranger

I smiled hearing his voice

Me: Keegan

Him: good to know you remember me it has been a while I miss you

Me: yeah I miss you too

Him: sorry I haven't checked up on you my life has been a disaster well for one Nicole kept my baby and my wife found out now I am a divorced man we need to catch up where are you?

I smiled I even forgot he wanted me to convince Nicole to get rid of his child

Me: actually I am in Pretoria

Him: you wont believe this I am also in Pretoria so am I seeing you for lunch today

I chuckled

Me: I don't see a problem

I hung up and joined everyone in the lounge and we watched Tv

Mom: baby I am leaving tomorrow after church

I looked at her and nodded

Mom: I cannot stay here beside you and Kenny are not married and you know this is a sin but I won't tell you how to live your life just know your father will never set foot here

I nodded I knew of course he wouldn't set his foot here, Kenny came to join us holding my daughter and he placed her on the floor she started crawling around, he really has taken his time to build her confidence in crawling again

Him: can we talk?

I joined him in the kitchen

Him: I will be out the whole day okay I will see you around when I come back

Me: okay, I am also seeing a friend today

He looked at me

Him: what friend? Busi, Jay, Karabo, Lerato and Nkosi should be your only friends

Me: Keegan my ex-boss from KZN he is here and want to meet up with me

He looked at me without talking his face was tight

Me: he is the one who hired that lady lawyer for me who helped me with the divorce

Him: how much does the lawyer cost?

Me: I don't know I never asked because he helped me for free

Him: there is nothing for free ever, I need his contacts and where he lives

I nodded and he walked to me

Him: I am sorry I just need to be extra careful this world is full of predators and they have one common goal on hand

Me: but you trust me right

Him: it is him I don't trust

The door opened while we were still talking and Sandile saw me his smile grew wide

Sandile: mamatwo

I hugged him as he ran into my arms

Me: baby wami how are you?

He blushed and kissed my cheek

Him: right wena?

I chuckled

Me: I am fine baby

He looked at Kenny

Sandile: khulu?

We looked at each other and we all laughed

Me: mkhulu bae

Him: baby I am malume okay

He nodded and I put him down as he walked back to Lucky and Kenny hugged me

Him: I will be back okay and you can use my cars

Me: I have a car thanks

Him: that thing is not a car but...

He lifted his hand in defeat and walked out, I told my mother I was coming back I got in my car and drove to the restaurant that Keegan suggested. We caught up and I told him about being laid off and he was angry I didn't talk to him at all

\*KENNY\*

I woke up in the morning and hit the gym I need to keep my mind sharp, I need to be focused and that meant no sex at night and no food just need energy to survive the day

and keep the adrenaline rush pumping today was the day to do the heist and get our money. Mpumelelo a girl Mal hired to work as Jetro's P.A sent us all the details of which file to snatch and where he will be and what time. She also tapped into his phone so I could trace who he contacts. I got in my car and got inside the restaurant I looked at him as he walked in, Chace and Arthur sat as if they were having a friendly morning breakfast. I got up carrying the same file as his just different information inside the first four pages identical to the ones in the original, I bumped into him and we dropped the files

Me: sorry

Jetro: just watch were you are going next time!

I quickly switched the files and walked out of the restaurant and browsed the file and I found out the horns are in his storage and I texted Mal to get the keys and Freddie to check the site out. I watched as he sent another girl, she pretended to break a heel and fell in Jetro's arms I watched to see if there anyone else keeping tabs. Mal took the keys from the table and handed it to Chace who slide it to Arthur under the table and he put it in his backpack. They got up and got into their cars Freddie texted that he was already there and it was clear he inserted the cameras and I looked at the place through the surveillance just in case he was being stalked. We all drove there and managed to open the door. My phone beeped alerting me that Jetro just made a call meaning he was onto us, I looked and he contacted the police

Me: we have exactly 15 minutes to pull this off, he alerted the police

We got in and found sacks full of horns and we snatched all of them loading everything in the cars, leaving the storage empty. We got in our cars and drove off with me being the last, I heard the sirens and gun shots going off, I adjusted my seat in order to avoid getting shot. We were all driving like maniacs and went our separate ways so it wont be easy for the cops to see us. While driving Amanda called me and I answered it

Her: hey Kenny honey I need help

Me: what is wrong?

Her: are you okay you sound like you are in a rush?

Me: yes honey I am in a high speed chase with the cops

I said this to test how she would react

Her: what?!

Me: I am joking relax my love what is going on?

Her: my car broke down and I need help

Me: did you call your insurance

Her: I kind of cancelled when I got laid off

Me: okay love I will try to get there as soon as possible

I hung up and looked at my phone how am I going to explain these horns to him and another call came through

Chace: hey buddy Mal needs your help his car got a flat tyre. I am meeting with Wong as we speak

Me: okay

I hung up and called Lucky

Me: brother can you do one favour for me?

Him: what's up?

Me: can you get Amanda her car broke down

Him: sure no problem send me the coordinates

I hung up and sent him the coordinates and texted Amanda to expect Lucky. I drove to Mal and found Arthur and Freddie there already, their cars were full of some of the sacks from Mal's car and I gave him a lift we drove to the meeting point

Freddie: there are so many sacks with different weights

Arthur: speaking off lets check it out

We opened the sacks some contained pure uncut Platinum and others contained horns and Mandrax. We looked at each other and the sacks. Mal screamed out loudly

Mal: yes good Lord tomorrow I am going to church!

Me: we can give him the drugs we not getting involved in drugs

We all agreed and took everything to the warehouse and left the drugs somewhere where he can get them I checked the time it was late and decided to drive home, I got in and passed Lucky's room I wanted to hear how it went before joining Amanda just in case she is angry

Him: Amanda please give me a chance please!

Her: Lucky this is wrong let me go please I am sorry for hurting you I really am please just let me go, I promise I will leave and go to my house

Him: you don't have to leave just be with me

I couldn't hear anything but I felt a slap and the door opened and she came out rushing and her eyes met mine she looked scared and run into my arms, I wanted to push her

and ask her what happened but I couldn't because she looked fragile and I was hungry as hell I don't have the energy for this

Me: go sleep

I said this in a stern voice it scared me must be the hunger, she nodded and walked to our room she kept looking at me I couldn't express my emotions I couldn't show her how I was feeling and I could see she didn't know how to react. It was time to talk to my brother it was time I stop being selfish, I have neglected him enough and focused too much on Amanda I forgot how all of this would affect my brother. The one I raised from a young age when both my father and his fling were focused on each other. I entered his room and found him sitting in his bed

Me: Lucky my Lucky star

Him: leave me alone

I sat on the bed and pulled him to me

Me: remember blood over everything

He looked at me and nodded

Me: are we not blood?

Him: yes we are

Me: didn't I raise you even when they lied about your paternity and that your mother's husband is your father. Didn't I show you the love you deserve and told you to tell me when something that bothers you

He nodded and I hugged him

Me: I am sorry I am bringing so much pain in your life, I am sorry I took the woman you love and sadly I force you to watch her as she builds a life with me I am sorry

He nodded

Me: I have decided I to buy a new house you can either stay here or move there and if you want I can leave Amanda and allow her to come back to you I can see how much you love her and I cannot see you break like this I love you Lucky star I would do anything in the world for you even if it means hurting me in the process. I would bleed for you and take a bullet for you dammit

He sobbed loudly

Me: I want to see you happy and I want you to have everything in the world, I can stand up now and go to my room and tell her we are through just for you, as much....

I couldn't finish I started crying and he looked at me, I never cried, I only cried when my mother went away when she went through all that pain alone

Me: as much as it will hurt us I don't want to see you suffer like this

I couldn't stop myself and he wiped my tears it looked weird and gay

Him: no don't, I can see she is very happy with you. She never once said she loves me but she has confessed that easily with you. I love you, bhuti if you must know I have seen how much you have been hurt. Bhuti I know all the sacrifices you have done for me, you protected me from that man you call a father and allowed me to live happily with an unhappy home. You loved me even though I was the product of your father's cheating ways that broke your mother. bhuti if you love Amanda as much as you say, I promise to back off and I will stay here. You can go to the new house

I chuckled as he said this

Me: you know I bought that house two days back only

Him: okay

Me: and Gertrude huh?

He thought I wouldn't know but I knew very well all I have bugged all my cars just in case. He pushed me and we had a little wrestling this is my little brother

Me: move aside I want to sleep

Him: no way only good pussy can sleep next to me wena no

We shared a laugh and I walked out heading to my room, I found her struggling with her baby and packing her bags

Me: are we going somewhere?

Her: I don't want to get between you and your brother I am sorry

I pulled her to me and kissed her forehead

Me: don't worry about that we will deal with it in the morning go to sleep

Her: he kissed me

Me: well he also gave you a child but here I am still staying so relax, I heard everything and please you are stressing Mpilo

I took her from Amanda to sooth her

Me: sleep and tomorrow we will go to that church of yours

She smiled and got on the bed I battled a bit with Mpilo but after a bottle rocking chair and good story she slept. I rushed to the kitchen made left over food man I am hungry and ate until I couldn't eat. This was indeed a long day

## CHAPTER 35\*

\*Amanda\*

I woke up in the morning and I was wrapped around his arms I left him comforting Mpilo and passed out on the bed, I moved his hand and woke my baby I had to rush to Church I didn't want to be late, as I was getting dressed he woke up and took a shower himself. When I was dressing Mpilo he came out and sat on the bed with a towel wrapped around his waist I can't never stop admiring his body ever

Him: Amy we need to talk

I looked at him

Him: well last night I shouldn't have stopped you from packing because ...

I didn't let him finish I walked to the wardrobe and packed my bags I shouldn't have known this was good to be true I should have known I wasn't the one for him. What did I expect I got between him and his brother, I kissed his brother well he kissed me. I get it I am disgusting for loving two brothers and having a kid with one of them, maybe it is in the bro code or something but it was selfish of me. When Lucky kissed me I won't lie and say I didn't want him to. I wanted him one last time but I couldn't it would be selfish for me to remain stuck in one place.

I didn't even feel him stand close to me I felt his arms around me and I stood in one place allowing my emotions to take place I don't even know why I am crying that is the most ridiculous thing ever. I pushed out of his embrace and finished packing

Me: I will tell my kids to pack

Him: did you even hear what I just say to you

I didn't even know he was talking I was prepared to leave and he stopped me

Him: stop doing unnecessary drama will you! And allow me to finish



Me: stop shouting!

Him: I am sorry would you just listen to me

Me: I am leaving aint i?

Him: yes out of this house because...

Me: that is all I needed to hear

I walked out and went to their room and asked my kids to pack

Mpho: oh he told you finally sheesh this keeping secrets is not for me

Me: what are you talking about?

Naledi: oh he didn't tell you, don't worry mama we have packed already, that day you decided to sleep early he told us his plan. You really have a good man anyway we are ready for church

Am I missing something? He came out of behind he was fixing himself and he handed my daughter to me

Him: come with me please

I followed him and he got in the bedroom and he continued getting dressed and he wore his shoes we didn't talk while I was just looking at him, he went to the bathroom and fixed his hair and joined me in the bedroom

Me: are we going to talk?

Him: are you going to lose this attitude you have?

Me: I don't have an attitude

Him: we going to be late for this church things of yours

Really he took me from my children only to have me watch him dress and now we going to church. He packed our bags in the boot of the car I got in and we drove to church. He made sure to carry my daughter and sit in the front of the door sadly it was two chairs so I had to separate from the rest

Mpho: mama he looks uncomfortable

I laughed as he said this and they sat behind us, he got bored and rested his hand on my thigh and I looked at him while the lady sitting next to us looked at us weirdly

Him: I am bored

He whispered in my ear while he continued drawing circles on my thighs and I slapped his hand away causing him to chuckle. A message arrived for him and he stood up to leave

with Mpilo the door man told him he can't leave during the service, he pulled him close to his face and whispered something in his ear the poor guy nodded and opened the door.

Kenny looked at me and winked as he left he moved his face suggesting me to join him and I looked at the pastor when I turned he was gone. The service continued and they talked about divorce I felt awkward and judged sitting there, I felt like I was a sinner in front of God's eyes like I was dirty and wrong. When we were done I walked out and found him sitting in the car, mpho knocked on his door

Mpho: was church burning your soul?

They laughed and we went for lunch and afterward drove my mother to the airport she flew all the way back and we drove to another house it was bigger than the previous one. We got in and I kept looking at it, my children ran inside and I stood there with Kenny

Me: what is this?

Him: it is our new house

I was shocked to say the least, it was really beautiful and open the space was magnificent

Me: ken I can't afford this beside I don't want to depend on you for all things. What happens when we break up?

Him: I once made a mistake of letting someone feel unappreciated and I lost them, I realise now that if you want someone you love to be with you for the rest of your life you need to act out fast. And I love you Amy I don't want to lose you the way I lost...

He paused like something was bothering him I tried getting his attention to no avail

\*KENNY\*

I have made many mistakes in my life and the day I found Ntombi I traumatized her for life it is something I am not proud of

---FLASH BACK-----

I came back from work and it was earlier than usual I walked to my bedroom, MINE, and I heard her moaning, I smiled thinking she was pleasuring herself being ready for me, I opened the door and she was on top of her friend she was allowing him to touch her breasts well she moved in circular motion allowing him to cum inside her I hurts watching her do that.

Me: what the fuck are you doing in my house?

Her: baby!

She jumped up and I could see his jizz coming down her thighs they weren't even using condom

Me: both of you do me a favour and get the fuck out of my house, actually...

I took out my gun and pointed it towards the guy

Me: get out!

He took his clothes and ran out while Ntombi tried to do the same

Me: you stay!

She was shaking and I banged the door locking us in

Me: after all that I have done for you, in my fucken bedroom you are a piece of shit

Her: I am sorry

Him: you are FUCKEN SORRY SCREWING MEN IN MY FUCKEN HOUSE I HAVE DONE EVERYTHING FOR WOMAN 20 FUCKEN YEARS!

Her: 20 YEARS OF BEING YOUR FUCKEN GIRLFRIEND KENNY YOU NEVER GOING TO MARRY ME, HELL BUSI GOT MARRIED 6 MONTHS INTO THE RELATIONSHIP WITH CHASE, LERATO GOT ENGAGED EVEN MAL THE FUCK BOY OF THE GROUP GOT MARRIED I AM STILL THE GIRLFRIEND IT IS DEGRADING KENNY YOU NEVER GOING TO MARRY!

She broke down causing me to be very angry I did everything for her, she knows I don't believe in marriage and I told her the reasons why. But she fucks around and blames me well she has another thing coming

Me: fine you know what tonight I am going to end all the ridiculousness one of us is going away for good

I took out my revolver and loaded a bullet and span it she needed to learn to mess around with other people's feelings and my heart is not a toy

Me: we are going to play a game one of us is going out on a body bag

Her: Kenny we have a kid

Me: you should have thought of that

I pointed the gun to my head

Me: let's pray

She closed her eyes crying and I pulled the trigger and she screamed I thought I had died but here I am breathing and I tossed her the gun I could see the fear through her eyes I could see the desperation and she sobbed out loudly I felt her as she swallowed hard and I looked at her she wants to play dirty well than this is the time to play dirty she needs to handle it

Me: do it!

She was sweating probably sweating that bastard out

Me: it is either you do it or I will do it for you

She did it I heard the loud and she closed her eyes I thought this was it she was gone for good until I felt her breath out loudly she cried loudly and I took the gun from her

Me: goodbye

Her: no please I don't want to play this game

I pulled the trigger and smiled

Her: you are sick Kenny please

She was about to shoot herself when my son called out loud I could feel the desperation he had he reminded me of the time I was young craving my mother's love, uncertain about her love for me. Feeling scared that I was losing her, I stopped her and walked to my son. She quickly got dressed

Me: leave and never come back to me ever again if we are to have a relationship it will be because of Chesray as for you and I we done bitch get out! NOW!

She picked up my son and walked away with him. I stopped her and told her my son is not leaving in her state. I took him to her the following day

-----PRESENT-----

I heard her calling out my name and she held my face

Me: I don't want to lose you Amy I am determined to keep you in my life for ever

Her: what happens when the love dies?

Me: close your eyes

She did

Me: think of a song that brings good memories to you

She smiled while she did that

Her: I can hear it

Me: did you need me to play music to hear it?

She shook her head

Me: exactly just like that music you hear our love will burn like that our love will never die I love you

Her: I love you too

I walked closer to her, her eyes were still closed

Me: don't open your eyes

She didn't and I planted a kiss she responded in the way I wanted her to

\*AMANDA\*

Three months past and today I woke up, to an empty bedroom Mpilo was visiting Lucky and I did my morning rituals before joining Kenny in the lounge. He was typing on his computer eating a sandwich when I sat next to him he stopped typing and looked at me

Me: hello

He smiled and kissed my cheek, I took a bite from his sandwich

Him: hey beautiful

Me: baby I was thinking I am bored sitting here at home and I need to go back to work

He looked at me playing with his mouth

Me: I am serious

Him: I didn't say anything. Okay anyway I wont stop you from working

I smiled and squealed like a five year old

Me: thank you and Keegan has sent my cv to the company he is working at

Him: I still don't trust this Keegan

Me: get over it

Him: and you finished my sandwich woman I am hungry

I looked at the plate and at him

Me: I am sorry I didn't mean to finish your food

Him: yeah I guess I will have some at the restaurant since you are lazy to make food,  
MPHO! NALEDI

They rushed down

Him: time to go

Me: are you leaving without me

Him: you just ate babe two full slices

Me: really ken, it is fine you can all go for all I care you can leave me here I will be fine. Nobody cares about me I am tired all the time, I cook I clean I do laundry but never get invited to breakfast

Him....

Me: don't you dare say anything, by the way your son is coming I hope you cook for him or take him out for lunch

I walked to our room and got all emotional, I don't even understand why I had that outburst it is uncalled for what hell is wrong with me

## CHAPTER 36\*

After the explosive outburst I decided to take a nap and woke up when the doorbell went off. I opened the door and a cute little boy walked in I looked at Ntombi and greeted her she turned around and left, I closed the door and joined Chesray on the couch

Me: how are you?

He looked at me and looked at the TV

Him: where is dad?

Me: out he will be back

Come to think of it they have been gone for far too long

Him: is it true?

Me: what?

Him: did you trap him between your legs?

I was shocked to hear him say this I couldn't even answer him properly

Him: mommy says so and that you will hurt me

Ntombizodwa

Me: I will never do that why would I want to hurt you?

He shrugged his shoulders and he looked at the TV, he changed the channel without asking me and watched whatever he wanted to watch I didn't have the energy to fight with him

Him: I am hungry

Me: there is the kitchen baby

Him: I am not a baby and can you please make me something to eat

I stood up

Me: what do you want?

Him: waffles

I made the waffles and topped it with ice-cream, I give it to him and sat next to him next he dropped the plate

Him: I am sorry please don't hit me

Me: I wont hit you why will I hit you

I stood up and swept the broken plate and cut my hand in the process I was bleeding heavy and I cleaned the wound and wrapped a bandage around it

Him: I am sorry I will make my own food since yours was out

I looked at him and decided not to speak I didn't want to agitate him further. We awkwardly sat on the couch and watched whatever program he wanted to watch. The door opened and my kids came to hug me they were carrying plastic bags full of goodies and food and Kenny came in carrying a big white box and placed it on the table, he locked eyes with his son and they shared a hug he whispered something in his ears

Me: what is happening?

They looked at me and smiled decorating the table with food and snacks. And they all sang happy birthday to me my tears involuntarily came down and I didn't even know what to do or how to act, the door opened and Lucky came in carrying my daughter and Sandile came to me and sang to me as well. I cut the cake and feed everyone my piece first, the way I have been preoccupied I forgot about my own birthday

Kenny: and now for my present

He kneeled down and handed me a small box I couldn't even react I froze on the spot as much as I love my Kenny I just got out of a heavy marriage and I am not ready for marriage

Him: open it

I did and relief took over I don't think I am ready to get married so soon we need to figure each other first and 4 months is not enough for that. I learned a lesson by loving Lucky soon before my divorce making him my rebound

Him: I bought you a car

I was lost at words

Him: come

He pulled me and we walked out and the car was there staring at me

Me: oh my word Ken I don't know what to say

Him: don't say anything just a simple thank you

I turned to him and hugged him

Me: thank you

And we shared a kiss, the day went well fast and everyone went to bed. Lucky left with Sandile. So it was just me and Kenny sitting on the lounge enjoying wine he was drinking whiskey

Me: thank you so much today was just perfect

I sat on top of his lap and kissed him on his lips

Him: anything for you and our kids, how was chilling with Chesray?

Me: well he is still getting used to me

He nodded and stood up helping me up as well we walked to the shower

Him: we cannot sleep next to Mpilo smelling like this

He ran the shower and pulled me to him. And our bodies collided

Me: we should let her sleep in her room

Him: she is still small she needs to be protected from bad dreams

I looked at him with horror on my face and he smiled

Him: okay from tomorrow she is sleeping alone deal

Me: deal

We continued allowing the water to hit us we didn't even realise we were still fully clothed, we started undressing and he uncapped my bra and took the scrub and poured soap on my body while I closed my eyes and he gently washed me I was lost in his touch and the sensations he gave me. He gently massaged womanhood and rested his head on my



shoulder while I tried to balance myself with my one hand on his back and my other hand was on his hand as he moved it in and out of me.

He lifted his face and planted a kiss on my lips. I felt both his hands on my bums as he picked me up and squeezed me he kissed my neck and moving all the way to my mouth I kept moaning in his mouth and rolled my head back when he inserted himself inside me and I rested my head on his shoulder until I felt the coldness of the wall against my back.

We went all for a while and called out to his name I don't know if it was the alcohol having an effect on me or what but something was different tonight, next thing he was on the bathroom floor and I was on top of him while he cupped my breast and eventually he kissed them, he rolled until I was on the bottom and he further separated my legs and he continued thrusting in and out both our bodies were dripping wet and both of us were satisfied. I reached climax before he ejaculated in me I felt him twitching inside me causing me to have another orgasm

We finished the rest of the shower and he picked me up and tucked me on my side of the bed while he walked out of the room

Me: where are you going?

Him: I will be back in the morning rest

Me: come sleep please

He came to me and kissed my forehead

Him: I love you okay now for my sake sleep. Oh are you going to church tomorrow?

I shook my head I was too tired and he walked out as soon as he closed the door I closed my eyes and I slept immediately. I was woken by my baby screaming in my ear and I stood up taking us to the bathroom and I left her in the bathtub rushing to the toilet to throw up which took me roughly 30 seconds when I was done I joined my baby and bathed together, I got out brushed my teeth and got dressed, I came back for my daughter and clothed her, we walked to the kitchen and everyone was there. Today was a very rainy day and the house was also a bit cold

Naledi: give her to me mama

I gave her Mpilo and they left the kitchen

Me: so what is for breakfast?

Mpho: woman we were waiting for you

I glared at him and he chuckled

Mpho: don't just look at me we are dying of hunger

Me: one day I am going to slap you

Mpho: you? Slap your favourite child? God is alive people

Me: if he is alive now why were you going to church?

Mpho: to satisfy you what else

We laughed I couldn't be angry at him

Me: chesray do you want anything for breakfast?

Him: whatever you make I will eat

Me: okay, did you see your father this morning?

He shook his head and I took out bacon but the smell was off

Me: Mpho why didn't you tell me the food was going off

He took the bacon and looked at the date and smelled it

Him: I don't know what you are talking about, this thing is fine

He threw the bacon in the pan and the smell was bad I forced it in and allowed him to finish in the kitchen and I walked to the lounge, I switched on the news and something caught my eyes. They were talking about an investment company that was a pyramid scheme taking people's monies. The company seemed legit and unsuspecting clients lost their monies

I sat down and felt like my world was collapsing I was on the verge of breaking down. The unsuspecting people, I am one of the unsuspecting people I just lost half of my money.

Mpho: mama are you okay?

I stood up and made several calls to the company but no one was answering. No matter what you hear and clear the evidence there is that little hope that maybe just maybe there has been a mistake and maybe just maybe I can get my money back and that hope kept dying as no one was answering.

I just stood up and walked to the bedroom. I closed the door and got on top of the bed just thinking of how I have made a bad decision and to think Keegan is the one who introduced me to this company telling me it was legit and I should invest in it. I felt my tears coming down, I needed to confront him I need to see him and ask him if he knew. I took out my phone and it went straight to voicemail, I remember during lunch he told me where he stays I stood up and walked down

Me: Mpho Naledi

They came to me and asked me why I am crying

Me: it is not important what I want you to know is that I am leaving I will be back okay

Mpho: mom is safe for you to drive in this state? Did you take your pills

How could I in the time like this

Me: I need to sort something out

Her: mama what should we tell Uncle Kenny when he comes?

Me: just tell I went to see a friend

I walked out and got in the car and drove to Keegan's place, I knocked on his door and he didn't answer the rain was pouring on my body

Me: Keegan it's me!

He opened the door and looked at me while I was dripping wet

Him: I am sorry Amanda I didn't know

Me: so you know why I am here

I started sobbing

Me: I just lost almost everything Keegan!

Him: I am really sorry, and please come in

Me: sorry I lost and you are sorry, how is sorry going to fix this?

He tried to touch me and I slapped him across the face

Him: I am sorry I don't know what to say

I closed my eyes and remembered Naledi asking me how we are going to survive now that I am not working. I opened my eyes and got in the car

Him: Amanda I think you need to calm down and breathe you cannot drive in this state I also lost some of my money I know what you are going through plus its raining heavily.

I closed the door and windows, I started the engine and drove out, I just kept staring at the road ahead with tears blocking my way the rain was not making things easy for me I kept driving until I heard a truck hooting my way I got in the wrong lane I tried to turn fast but I heard a loud bang everything was happening fast I felt the car rolling with me I wasn't wearing my seatbelt I weakly opened my eyes and I was getting wet the car threw me out, I felt a loud explosion I looked above me and a quantum had also rolled people were screaming I closed my eyes slowly I felt my body getting lighter like my soul was departing from my body. Everything was blank and peaceful

## CHAPTER 37\*

\*KENNY\*

I left her sleeping after kissing her forehead and joined my brother at his house my ex house and he really did transform the place. He asked me to spend time with him and that I have been distant lately talk about guilt tripping someone. When I got in he was with Mandla and they were drinking beer

Lucky: do you want one?

I shook my head and threw myself on the couch

Mandla: the missus has you locked up neh?

I punched him

Me: wena you went mute and disappeared after finding the love of your life, how does she cope with all of your craziness?

Mandla: the same way yours survives with your lifestyle

I looked away

Mandla: you haven't told her?

Me: I will in time we still taking things slow

Lucky: today I thought you were going to propose

Me: I will one day just not now

Mandla: you both love this woman don't you?

Me: I guess

Mandla: I would kill my brother for my woman

I chuckled speaking off

Me: where is sam?

Lucky choked on his drink

Mandla: somewhere where he belongs

I didn't ask any further and I ended up drinking with them, letting go of everything and the whiskey was definitely having the effect we all past out on the couch, when I woke up it was raining outside and I walked to the bathroom to refresh. Something just doesn't feel right about this day and I hate feeling like this I don't like this feeling it just irks me. I heard

a faint sound of my phone ringing and I walked out and found Lucky sitting on the couch he looked at me

Me: morning small one

He chuckled

Him: morning. Breakfast

Me: yes ma'am tell me did my phone go off?

He shook his big head, I looked for my phone and I didn't find it

Me: by the way did you see my phone

He still shock his head. We sat down and had breakfast just catching up as siblings and cousins. For a moment I felt the sharpest head and I stood up I think I am coming down with a fever

Lucky: are you okay?

Me: I think I am going to be but mostly I need to go home and I need headache tablets

I stood and prepared to go home when I heard my ringtone and found my phone tossed under the TV stand I thought I just checked there where is my mind today. The caller was Chace and I answered

Me: sup?

Chace: hey partner uhm where are you?

Me: I am bonding with my family

Chace: we are your family and I don't see you here

I chuckled

Me: jealous much?

He laughed

Him: look I need you to come to the hospital it is important

Me: what is happening?

Him: it's Amanda she was involved in a car accident

Me: how is she? Where are the kids?

Him: she was alone I need you here ASAP

I hung up and looked at my phone there was a notification about her car, part of the tracker devices I create and put in my cars, and indeed she was involved in an accident

Lucky: what's the rush?

Me: Amanda was involved in a car accident and I need to go get her kids

Him: can I go see her while you get the kids

I nodded and called her parents while I drove to the house. I got in and found them chilling

Me: hey guys

Naledi: hey uncle, uhm mom went out

Mpho: sure pops

Chesray gave me a hug and Mpilo was napping

Me: we need to get ready your mother was involved in a car accident and she is in hospital

They all exclaimed and were shocked

Mpho: I knew I should have stopped her

I held him and Naledi rushed to the car, I carefully tucked Mpilo in and drove to the hospital when we got there Lucky was sitting outside crying and I held his shoulder

\*LUCKY\*

While my brother went to the bathroom I heard his phone going off and I looked at it I saw Amanda's name pop up and I knew he would leave me to go join her and I hid it in my pockets I guess it was my jealousy when he was done looking for it I threw it under the TV stand. After the phone call I wish I never hid it maybe we could have saved her maybe she wouldn't be in this accident. I asked my brother to go and see her while he fetched the kids, when I got there Chace stopped me

Him: I cannot let you in yet

Me: what do you mean?

Him: she is in a critical stage she is not stable and could die at any moment

Me: just give a chance to say goodbye please

I begged him and eventually he gave me 5minutes when I got in she had a lot of machines attached to her

Chace: she won't hear you technically she is closer to death

His words hit me hard and I just looked at her, he left and gave us space and I held her lifeless hand in my hand and kissed it she was cold

Me: I am sorry mama wethu, I shouldn't have been selfish and allowed my brother to reach you in time. I am sorry for all the pain I have caused you please forgive me. I know I have been selfish please forgive my blackened heart

I kissed her cold lips and looked at her

Me: please come back, even if it means letting you go. I will, dear God I promise I will let her go and be happy with my brother please forgive me and my selfish ways and save the woman that I love she will always have my heart but I am willing to let her go please dear lord hear my prayers

Chace: time

I nodded and walked out I sat on the benches and cried until I felt my brother's hand

\*KENNY\*

Chace came to me and he sat next to me

Him: where are her parents?

Me: on their way

Him: do you want to see her?

He explained to me about her conditions I just sat there and watched into space. After a few hours her parents came they went in saw her and came back I didn't have the energy to do anything or go in, I love my woman and at any moment she could leave me at any moment she could die and I didn't want to give her satisfaction of dying after hearing my voice.

Chace: its good I caught you all here I am doing all I can to bring her back but the damage is too much, some of her organs are damaged and she has 6 broken ribs so now problem is we discovered she is pregnant and the child might not make it, the decision is up to you

They all looked at me I didn't even hear what was said I heard pregnant and immediately sat down to catch my breath my child is danger of not being born my child is in danger of dying my woman is closer to death than before. I heard distant voices talking

Mother: I am choosing her child if she wakes up and finds out we killed her child she will hate us for good she always put her kids first before herself

I heard the kids crying

Lucky: please save her she can have other children later it is not the end of the world she will learn to forgive us, her children need her they need her to protect them

I closed my eyes and felt someone shake me

Me: what!

Chace: I need to hear your opinion since it is your child

I looked at everyone and they all gave me the saddest look

Me: what is the use I choose one and lose another?

I felt tears come out of my eyes and Naledi sat next to me and I smiled at her

Me: I choose my woman she loses a child and won't stop blaming herself, I choose the child and she dies and we lose the woman we all love. If there is ever a time where I prayed it will be today I don't want to lose either one of them God know that is a good woman in there a woman who prays to him an innocent soul trapped in between who didn't even ask to be born he was made because I was selfish I forgot to tell her we didn't

I looked at the children and shook my head at Mpho's expression

Me: you know what I mean, all I am going to ask from you Chace and most importantly from this God you all pray to, please do all you can to save them both

I broke down and Chace held me in an embrace

Me: I don't want to lose them the way I lost my mother, I lost faith when the woman who took care of me lost everything to a loser and she kept praying and crying. I am trying to believe please restore my faith but I know it is not how your Gods works he would rather see you suffer and lose in life

I have never cried this hard in my life they say a man mustn't cry but how when everything you love is about to slip out of hands. I love her I cannot imagine life without her, she had completed me these past few months, its true when they say death is closer or around your birthday date I mean just yesterday she was happy celebrating her birthday and now we crying for her

Chace: brother please I will do everything I can to save them I wont let you down

He walked back in the ward and I looked at the kids

Me: go home you have school tomorrow

I looked at her parents

Me: you can either go to my house or hers if you feel it is a sin but I want them at school tomorrow they need to rest



I gave them both keys they can choose and I asked Lucky to drive Chesray to Ntombizodwa after everyone left the police came and I looked at them they explained what happened

Detective: I am sorry we have decided to open a case of attempted murder against her seeing she is the one who created this mess

I sat down and buried my head in my hand what have you done my love this is a big mess and I need to clear it up fast I just need time. after they left Chace came back and told me they managed to stabilize her and I walked in just watching her laying there I wanted to walk closer to her but I couldn't, I didn't realise how angry I was until I saw her laying there she created a big mess, endangered not only her life but the life of my child as well not forgetting those innocent people

How could she leave her children? Doesn't she care about us, her children? I want to punish her so badly lord knows I do, I need to make her learn not mess with our lives like this. It hurts watching her lay like this Lord please make her wake up don't let her leave me please. Why won't these damn tears stop coming

## CHAPTER 38\*

Chace opened the door and found me sitting next to her he offered me coffee and I took it

Him: you have been here for three days you need to go home and rest this is not healthy

I didn't even notice three days have passed I have been caught up in my own pain I forgot about the world outside

Me: shit I forgot they have an attempted murder case opened for her

Him: relax allow me to help you!

Me: I have to do this on my own!

He squatted in front of me and looked into my eyes

Him: allow me to help you, you know Mal and I can handle this you have taught us enough about gadgets and shit let us do this

I looked at him

Him: listen you know when people look at us you are the most calm and rationale on in the group, you only react when you need to. You have learned to control your anger and taught me self-discipline in military. You were the big brother I need people don't know when you lose control you are crazier than I am and I need you to take this anger you have and turn it into positive energy your family needs. Now please go get some rest and focus on your state of mind and don't make any irrational decisions

I stood up drinking the coffee

Him: Mal is here he is talking you home you are not driving like this

Me: thanks and I really didn't need help

Him: we are all family you, me, Mal, Arthur and to some extend although I hate him Freddie we have always had each other's backs we are one unit if one of us is hurt than we are all hurt

Me: stop with these emotional speeches

Him: you need it

I was about to leave when Lucky came in, he greeted us and walked to Amanda he held her hand I waited to see a reaction still nothing I have not even touched her nor talk to her I have been watching her I don't know what I think I will achieve by doing that because I am just punishing myself hurting me she is not feeling all of this

Me: bye

Chace: and get something to eat oh and before you go take I made it for you

I walked out and Mal was waiting for me we didn't say much but drove all the way to my house it was empty meaning they choose Amy's house. I walked to the bedroom and threw myself on the bed the moment my head touched the pillow it was light out

When I woke up I checked the time and it was morning the following day, I took a quick shower and looked at the spot we last made love I miss her, I miss the way she touches me and makes me feel good the way she touched my body and how I would react to her soft angelic moans. Shit it was on her birthday and if memory is correct she drank the whole bottle of wine I hope it won't affect my baby at all. I walked out and got dressed. I walked to the kitchen and I noticed I wasn't hungry. If I am feeling like this how are my kids feeling. I fed my dogs and took the envelop Chace gave to me, I took my car keys and drove to Amanda's house. I knocked on the door and Naledi answered she threw herself in my arms and cried

Me: hey why are we crying?

She didn't say anything at all I broke the hug and placed my hand on the side of her face wiping some of her tears away she looked terrible

Me: did you sleep at all?

She shook her head and we walked to the lounge I sat on the couch and Mpho came carrying Mpilo, he placed her down and she ran to me. I crouched on the floor and she ran into my arms and I picked her up she is growing fast and I haven't seen her in four days. It is fun to see her walking

Her: dada!

I looked at her shaking my head

Me: you not going to stop calling me dada aren't you stubborn like your father and also you so cute

I tickled her and she was laughing in my arms and I blew her neck

While she wrapped her arms around me my brother is really lucky to have this kid I his life, I looked over at Mpho and he was not his usual self

Me: talk to me

He looked down like he was carrying the world on his shoulder

Him: I hate this I keep failing my family and I keep saying I am the man of the house, why can I not keep everyone safe? I failed my sister she was kidnapped and now I knew mom was not right but I allowed her to drive out in that state now she is going to lose another child and I failed to stop her

Me: it is not your fault and you are too young to be the man of the house the responsibilities are a lot. Let me tell you about me

I told him my story and he couldn't believe my father and what I went through

Naledi: I am scared Uncle Kenny

Me: why?

She sat down and joined me

Her: what if she dies we will be left without a father and a mother we will be left with our grandparents and their time is also coming so we will be on our own

I pointed at the space next to me and she sat

Me: look I will never leave you on your own you are like my children have I treated you like I don't love or want you?

They shook their heads

Me: good because as far as I know you are my children we will be together through the rough times ahead of us

I kissed their foreheads and Mpilo didn't want to get my lap

Me: we are family I don't care if we don't share blood

Her: can I call you dad?

Me: call me whatever you want now go sleep you look like hell you need to sleep

She hugged me and went to her bedroom

Mpho: wont you send us to boarding school

Me: not unless you want to go there. And I hope you don't think I am trying to replace your father

Mpho: I have no father I have you

I pulled him for an embrace

Me: you don't mean that

Him: if he can rape and torture my mother and murder his own father I don't think he deserves my respect at all real men don't hurt those they claim they love they protect them and he failed to protect any of us what was he teaching us that it is okay for me to do all the things he did? I should go out there and force myself on my girlfriend and claim that I love her and I will do anything for her marry and humiliate her?

I never heard some powerful words like this before

Him: as for my mother she should have thought of us when she went out and I warned her not to go in her state of mind she didn't even take her pills I guess she likes to act without thinking that is why she ended up with a man like Simon

Me: what happened? And please do try to forgive her

Him: I will try to forgive her but when she waked up she mustn't expect any smile or sympathy from me I am so angry pops its fine if I call you pops right

I nodded and allowed him to talk I was feeling the same way he is feeling but hearing it from him I don't think a son should hate his parents this much

Me: we need to forgive her

Him: I will

Me: what happened? That morning?

Him: she was preparing breakfast and couldn't stand the smell of bacon she watched the news and they were talking about an investment company that was a pyramid scheme they arrested a few bosses

Me: hmmm what is the name of the company?

He told me and I noted it down on my phone

Him: thank you for checking up on us and mostly thank you for being the father, brother and mentor I never had I love you pops

I hugged him as he stood up

Him: time to check on Naledi she needs us

Me: you are a good man

I winked at him

Him: thank you

Mother: thank you for being here for her children they have been depressed and they thought they you would never see them again, and her

She pointed at Mpilo who was enjoying her milk bottle on top of me this is true uncle/niece daughter/father relationship man this is messed up

Mother: she has never been this free until you came now

I looked at her

Me: you have been uptight baby you naughty this is granny you should be free with her

She giggled while I talked to her

Me: you are very naughty

We had a mini argument with Mpilo she is just stubborn with that baby talk and I talked to Sibongile afterwards she was updating me on her grandkids situation and I realise how much this has affected them

Me: if you don't mind you can bring them later on at my house I don't mind having them around and it will bring some sort of stability in their lives

Her: I will most certainly do that

I rocked Mpilo and she slept in my arms I didn't want her to cry for me when I left I kissed her forehead and walked to the bedroom, I found Naledi and Mpho sleeping I placed Mpilo in her cot and walked out without waking my babies up. I drove to the office I wanted to be around people but on my own my house was depressing without my kids

and my woman, Nancy greeted me and I told her not to send anyone in my office. I took out my laptop and started looking at the company responsible for Amanda's condition. Their whole thing was encrypted by the police, since I worked there once and I am the one who helped build the system. I cracked it and looked at the company information. While I was busy the door opened

Me: Nancy I told you I don't want to be disturbed!

I didn't look up I was annoyed

Her: sorry I thought I should be here as a friend and the mother of your son

I closed my eyes breathing heavily and looked at her she was wearing a long shirt and short shorts

Me: what do you want?

Her: you

Me: get out!

She moved closer to me and walked behind my chair

Her: I am sorry about your girlfriend and all but I am here now I will make it better allow me to help you

She whispered in my ear and pretended to give me a massage she walked over to my table and unbuttoned her shirt she wasn't wearing a bra and she walked to me trying by all means to touch me my computer beeped and I pushed her aside I couldn't finish reading when she unbuttoned my shirt sitting on my lap, I didn't realise she had taken her pants off and she was left with an open shirt and panties

Her: allow me to make you feel good allow me to grieve with you

She brought her lip close to mine teasing me in a form of kiss at first I found it sexy but right now she was testing me and I am trying by all means not to kill her

I pushed her off me and she fell on the floor, the envelop fell as well and I picked it up it was a scan of my little baby inside of Amy, I felt weak for a second and she wrapped her arms around me. I pushed her off again

Me: I am going to tell you this one more time leave me alone please just get the fuck out before I kill you. You are the one who messed up not me and now you have to accept we are not together and move on stop acting cheap around me just go

I could see the hurt in her eyes after she left I continued looking at files from the company and I found Keegan's name under it was Amanda's name he made her join under him the more I dug the more I found out it was his company and he was hiding behind the

people who were arrested. I found this from hacking into his personal phone account sending secret messages to those people closed my laptop and poured myself a glass of scotch it is time I pay him a much needed visit I respected him because he was Amanda's friend, but right now he is the cause of her pain he is a wolf in a sheep skin but I am the Alpha. I looked in my tracker list just to trace the last address Amy went to before the accident and I took the information in, took my keys finishing my second glass of scotch and drove to his place

\*CHAPTER 39\*

-NOT EDITED SORRY-

I drove home and took some accessories I think I might have to use to make this fun, he has to watch his empire collapse in front of him, I did a background check on him and his family. The door opened and my kids came in with their grandmother, I hugged them and they looked happy to be back home

Me: there is food in the fridge I will be back

Naledi: dad why are you dressed up like that?

Me: uhm I will be back soon you can put peaches in my bed and when she wakes up looking for the dogs Mpho can you take her outside since I don't want them in and they might attack your grandmother

They nodded and I got in my car driving to that idiot's house, I parked outside his house and the lights were on meaning he was home. I took out the baby scan and looked at it

Me: I am doing this for you baby I am sorry you are going through a lot because of a bad man well daddy will protect you from now on and mommy I will punish her one way or another

I kissed the scan and fixed myself, I got out and walked to his door I knocked and waited for an answer, I knocked again

Him: state your business!

Me: hi I am here to make an investment to your company

Him: I am sorry you got the wrong person

Dammit I thought he would open up for me

Me: oh I am sorry Amanda sent me here well I guess I will take leave

I heard the door open and he came out looking at me

Him: how do you know Amanda?

Me: we used to work together here in Pretoria

Him: oh do come in, it is a sad thing that happened to her

He chuckled like it was funny making my pissed

Him: you know she was well is a sweet person

Me: what do you mean?

He looked at me and shook his head

Him: anyway the company she was in is under investigation so I heard of a new one that is being open and you can join that one

Me: tell me more about it

We sat down while he explained everything to me this guy could sell ice to an Eskimo

Me: interesting what happened to Amanda's investments

Him: well she lost everything, you know at some point I wanted to protect her by making her mine but that bitch broke my heart and moved on with a young man. You know these bitches don't know good opportunities when they see one

The more he spoke badly about her the more it got me angrier he deserves a slow painful death

Him: there wasn't a time I wouldn't devote me to her well I did everything to make her look at me and see how much I love her but she is stupid and choose to ignore me and my advances you know I once planned to take her to Cape Town and she choose to stay home with her new relationship. I even recorded her having sex and sent it to her husband. He paid me to bug hers and her lover's car which I did. Oh I shouldn't be telling you this anyway do you want anything to drink rather than discussing the black bitch who likes to act all holy

He stood up to pour me something to drink and I put my gloves on wiping everything I touched just so it doesn't go back to me. I have to make this look professional. He came back and offered me the glass

Me: I am not thirsty



Him: you never told me your name who are you

I got up and walked to him, I walked behind him took my gun and hit him on the head. I walked to the kitchen and washed the glass wiping it and placed back on where it stays I walked back and loaded my gun with one bullet. I wiped my prints off it and placed it next to him. I took out a hummer and poured water on his face. He woke up surprised

I took out my laptop and accessed his bank account while he continued to look confused

Me: insert your pin

Him: who are you and what do you want?

Me: insert your pin, I got this far I want you to watch your empire fall in front your eyes, I want your children to be well taken care of so do it

Him: I am not doing anything

I took the hummer

Me: maybe this will help

I raised it toward his knees

Him: stop okay I will do it!

He inserted the pin and all his accounts appeared before his eyes

Him: you got all my accounts

Me: I got more than that, now which account should we clear up first, oh wait let's give Amanda her money back

Him: she had her money back when she got Florence as her lawyer

Me: she didn't ask for your help now did she?

He shook his head while I made the first transaction

Me: well since tonight you are going to die and I really would hate your children to lose their father and suffer poverty well they deserve something from you and that is your money and your ex-wife has put up with your bullshit she deserves compensation don't you think? Such a loving husband you are

I transferred some of the money to his wife's account and to his illegitimate son's trust fund

Him: wait I have another child he also deserves something

Me: done now I want you to write a letter confessing to everything

Him: I am not crazy

I took the gun from the table and pointed it to him

Me: now

I gave him a pen and paper

Him: I won't do it

Me: I guess the gun is quick I should take this hummer and bash you watch you die slowly and in pain and agony

He looked shocked at my statement

Me: I don't have all night my kids are waiting for me

Him: please have mercy

I moved to him my anger took over and I put the gun under his chin pulling his head back and I whispered in his ear

Me: did you show mercy to Amanda when you took her money? Did you show mercy to all the other people who have lost so much because of you? So pain should be inflected to other and not you? Do you know my child and woman are in hospital because of you? Yes Amanda is my woman and she is carrying my child and you caused all of this so if you don't write this stupid letter I am going to murder your family one by one and I will have you watch as they die are we clear?

He nodded and with shaking hands started writing the letter, I sat opposite him watching as he confesses everything

Me: ask your wife to forgive you in the letter and tell her you are setting her free

He shook his head

Me: do it dammit!

He wrote it down and tears came out of his eyes falling on the paper when he was done he wanted to give me the paper

Me: no leave it there

He nodded and left it, I handed him the gun

Me: now this gun has one bullet and that bullet has your name on it

Him: no please no

Me: I did not ask you anything! Shut up!

Him: I am sorry

Me: good boy now you have two choices it is either you shoot yourself or I help you shoot yourself

Him: PLEASE!

He started begging me

Me: I am giving you 30seconds to choose, it is painful to be shot by someone than to do it yourself so choose. While you at it I think you should pray. Pray to Jesus, Buddha, and Allah whoever you believe in

We sat there for a few seconds with me watching him, he closed his eyes and made a silent prayer

Me: time is ticking do you want me to make the decision for you?

He took the gun and pointed it to me

Me: smart choice but as I said one bullet if I don't die there is nowhere in the world where you can hid from me I will find you like how I found your accounts so I will come for your family as I said

He nodded with tears in his eyes and pointed it to his head

Me: so you don't want my help?

Him: FUCK YOU!

With that said he pulled the trigger and shot himself, I pushed the chair in and neatly packed everything in taking it back to the car, I feel bad that his children will grow up without him but it had to be done he is the cancer to the world I put everything in my car boot and drove out, some of the neighbours were started to come out to see what is going on. I drove away in the middle of the bush I stopped and changed my number plates and threw it away. I drove home and went to the back yard first burning the gloves I was wearing. I sneaked in the house and walked to my room changing my clothes and joined peaches on the bed.

I woke up early in the morning got in the shower and dressed quickly, I found Mpilo crying on the bed

Me: I am sorry peaches come daddy is here

She threw herself on my hands and I gave her a much needed bath, walked into the lounge and the kids were making breakfast

Naledi: are you hungry

Me: what did you cook?

She gave me my plate and took Mpilo feeding her food she made, we talked a little

Me: I am going to see your mother do you want to come?

Them: tomorrow dad

Me: okay

Naledi: dad where were you I saw you come in late last night, I was hungry and I came to get food but you didn't see me.

I got tongue tied for a bit, I didn't want to alert her I just didn't think anyone was watching me

Me: I will tell you when I come back

I jumped out of my seat and rushed to the door

Me: there is some money

I left R6000 on the table and walked out driving to the mall first, there is a time in a man's life that he does realise how much he loves a person and my love for Amanda keeps growing every day and well this is part of her punishment but really I love this woman and I would kill for her she deserves everything nice coming her way she made me believe in love even after I have lost faith in it I hope she makes it, lord I keep forgetting to pray to you but here I am trying to make things right, I am sorry I drove that bad man to suicide but he didn't deserve to live, you said thy shall not judge and kill but I believe in an eye for an eye. After buying the engagement ring I drove to the hospital. I bumped into Chace and he looked at me before we shared a man hug

Him: we need to talk

We sat down and my heart was beating fast Lord please don't tell me you took your angel from me please bring her to me I will protect her please

Him: last night there was a change in her condition and we fought had, both her and the baby are in danger as we speak if she doesn't wake up now, I am afraid but she might not make it until tomorrow

I didn't hear what he said I stood up and walked to her ward she cannot leave me and her kids she cannot just die like this I will not allow it. I haven't even talked to her nor touch her

Me: damn you woman how could you be so selfish? How could you just want to leave me like this?

Chace came in and asked the nurses to leave us

Me: you made me believe in love you made me want to live with one woman and that is you. I love you dammit you found me at my lowest and I changed for you, I could have allowed Ntombi to sleep with me I could have gotten other women in my bed and let them leave the following morning but you, you came and changed my life only to want to disappear. Fuck you Amanda please come back fight dammit fight! Fight for me fight for our kids just fight we miss you we need you baby come to me please

I held her lifeless hand and tears fell down I kissed her hand and inserted the ring in her finger

Me: this ring I am proposing to you come back to give me an answer I don't want to live without you, I love you come back sweetheart fight for me

I couldn't handle it I stood up kissed her forehead and tears fell on her face and I tried to walk away but I felt her hand gripping on my hand

Me: yes please come back to me fight baby fight!

The machine started beeping and her heartbeat was beating fast, Chace rushed in and I left them there as they were busy with her. Lord bring her back please don't take her, her kids need her please I will do anything for her and I mean everything maybe pray with her every night but please

\*CHAPTER 40\*

-not edited too lazy to do it-

I sat in the waiting area and wished by all means I was inside with her, I don't know if she will make it or not. I just wish it is not the second one. Arthur came and sat next to me

Him: how are you holding up?

Me: I don't know

I really didn't know

Me: I don't know how I feel Arthur it's as if I lost her and at the same time have her back. I love her Arthur I even proposed to her unconscious body

He patted my shoulder

Him: I never thought I would hear those words coming from your mouth, you made poor Ntombi wait so long and it took 4.5 months for you to marry a stranger

I looked down and he was right

Me: I know I made many mistakes with Ntombizodwa but I cannot repeat the same thing with Amanda and the thing is I feel like I have known her all my life

He chuckled

Him: you know this is your first marriage and her second, and what about your brother? How will he handle this?

Lucky: with pride

We both looked at his direction

Lucky: bhuti can we talk?

Arthur: I will see you around

He stood up and walked away from me. Lucky sat next to me

Him: hi

Me: how are you?

Him: I am well I guess and you

Me: I am well

We sat in silent for a moment, I know how he is feeling I am about to marry the woman he loves and he is hurting

Me: I am sorry....

Him: no don't be I have seen how happy she is with you, and that is not why I am here

Me: so...?

Him: well dad and I had a talk and I decided that it is fair for me to leave

Me: leave? Leave where?

Him: I am going out of the country and I need to start afresh I need to be happy and South Africa is not doing it for me anymore I have seen all of it so I am taking Sandile with me and I am leaving I will be staying in South America for a while

Me: but? What about our baby girl she needs her father?

Him: that's another thing I want to ask from you

I cannot allow this I knew where it was going and it is not fair on the baby

Me: no you are not doing

I can't lose him like this he cannot just leave like this

Him: please just listen to me, she is your peaches and she loves you. I know you will protect her you are my Rambo she needs a stable home and a loving father I have ruined that for Sandile but I will fix it with him. Brother I don't want to separate mother and child and I don't want her to have a laptop as a father or her to travel like a manic to her father since you are marrying Amanda I am giving you my rights as a father please take care of my baby.

I shook my head he is not leaving. He handed papers giving away his rights

Him: please don't make me beg please

I closed my eyes and nodded taking the papers from him

Me: she needs you she is a baby when she grows she is going to need her real father

Him: and that will be you. We share blood don't we? I will miss her I will go to your house first and kiss her goodbye

Me: are you going to say bye to Amanda?

He shook his head and I gave him a big brother hug

Him: oh and can....

Me: yes you can access money anytime you need it

He smiled and stood up

Him: I won't take all of

And walked out, my phone went off and I answered it I didn't check the ID but I knew very well it was my father

Him: Jr what is this? my son is leaving because of you

I closed my eyes and tried to keep my cool

Him: you are a heartless fucker I have ever given birth to. And when am I seeing my grandson?

Me: the day you are die is the day you will see my son I will never allow you anywhere near him you are a curse in our lives. Second of all the son you are claiming where the fuck where you when his life was messed up, when he was a DJ and I took him to university to at least have a qualification. Those holidays he was alone where were you?

When he was bullied at school who took care of him? You don't even know what he likes you have never been a father to us sometimes I wish mother was the one who won custody you are nothing but useless, next time you call me argh the wont be a next because I won't answer your nonsensical calls you just wasted 5 minutes of my life which I will never get back so fuck you and have a good life

I hung up and waited for Chace to come, he opened the door and walked to my direction

Me: how is she?

Him: we managed to revive her so you can go in and see for yourself how she is doing

I stood up and walked into her ward, the nurse finished doing whatever she was doing and I walked to her. I held her head with my one hand and the other rested gently on her hand. I kissed her forehead

Me: hey Amanda can you hear me

She moved

Me: baby you are awake

She smile and gently opened her eyes her body was jumpy a little and I could see she was still very much in pain, he lips were still busted and swollen I wiped the tears that fell from her eyes and she just flashed her smile

Me: how are you feeling?

Her: i...t hurts to to to move

Her speech was still fragmented

Me: shh baby shh

Chace walked in with a smile

Him: I am happy to report that both she and...

Me: just she

He looked at me and the his smile faded

Him: I am happy to report that she is fine can we talk Kenny

I looked at her

Me: I will be back okay

Her: I will be here

I chuckled and joined Chace outside



Him: what are you doing?

Me: she doesn't deserve to know yet

Him: Kenny please don't tell me you are thinking of punishing her, she is going through a lot already

I took out my phone and called her family to inform them that she is awake

Him: I give up

Me: I will tell her relax

He walked in and injected something on her drip

Him: she needs to rest so she can heal and it won't affect you know

I watched her slowly drift to sleep, I sat down next to her and rested my hand on her belly

Me: hi baby daddy is here, I will never leave you alone I will love you just the way I love all my children. I cannot wait to see you

I kissed her tummy and looked up. This is new to me and seems very foreign. I kneeled down and closed my eyes, I felt weird doing this, I never thought he would hear a prayer of a sinner like me, I guess he answers more to us than to the good ones

Me: dear Father, I don't know if I am doing this right, I know I haven't spoken to you in such a long time. Heck what am I doing I am sinner a born sinner a thief a murderer and I don't know if you are listening or there is someone better you are listening to. I don't have much words to say but thank you, thank you for saving her for us and bringing her back to us thanking for saving the last I have for my faith thank you for protecting her and my child. I hope I am doing this right but thank you very much. What is it that they say at the end of the prayer? Amen I think if it is I am saying it

I opened my eyes and looked at her, man I am sure Jesus is preaching about the lost son now

Me: I love you baby

I kissed her ring finger and her parents came rushing in

Me: hi

They greeted back and rushed to be by her bedside

Me: they just sedated her but she will be awake soon

Mother: she has a ring on her finger

I looked at it and at them

Me: where are the kids?

Mother: Mpho forbid Naledi from coming and Lucky is at your house with Mpilo

I nodded

Me: Mr Ndzimande can I please have a word with you?

He nodded and walked out with me

Me: I am sorry for disrespecting you and living with your daughter in sin (why am I changing like this I don't believe do I?), I am sorry I made her pregnant outside marriage I am sorry I disregarded your wish the time Mpilo was kidnapped and took her without your approval please forgive me.

He looked at me, what is happening to me and suddenly developing moral consciousness

Me: I am sorry that both brother's from the same house have dirty you child I am sorry that one even slept with her while she was still in marriage with that Simon

He looked shocked to hear this words coming from my mouth

Him: I hear you son and it takes a real man to admit his mistakes

Me: I guess what I am really meaning to ask you is can I please have your daughter's hand in marriage

Him: I don't mind it is her that you need to ask, but know this I have failed her once in her life by giving her hand in marriage to Simon I trusted him and gave him too much power on my daughter and I won't do the same with you. There is something about you but that I can't put my finger to it I will have my eye on you boy, and if you hurt my daughter I will hurt you ten times more

I nodded

Him: but thank you for approaching me like a man

He walked back into the ward and after everyone left I went back to be by her side I didn't want her to be alone in the time like this. I don't want to lose her what if she goes back to her coma while I leave her. What if her condition changes and she dies leaving me alone with the kids.

I played with her hands and rested my head gently on her stomach, I felt the baby react and she winced a little. I guess she was still in pain I kept resting like that and slowly closed my eyes

## CHAPTER 41\*

\*AMANDA\*

Walking up was a mission I felt something a bit heavy resting on my stomach and I tried to adjust myself but my body was in pain everything was painful. I couldn't properly or move my hand without feeling the pain. I slowly rested my hand on his head and brushed it slowly. He lifted his face up and was looking at me

Him: hey

I weakly smiled at him and the door opened Chace came towards me and examined me

Chace: are you alright?

Me: I am but my body is in pain

He smiled and walked towards my feet

Chace: can you feel this

I felt a tiny sensation but I couldn't move my feet

Chace: can you move your toe?

I tried but nothing

Chace: it is okay it does happen you just need to rest and I will send in a physiotherapist to come and help you okay

I nodded

Chace: don't stress you took quite a huge knock and it is a miracle that you have survived after the accident

I looked confused for a few minutes then I remember him telling me I was in an accident when I woke up, everything became clear and I could hear their screams as the Quantum overturned with them. I slowly moved my hands to my ears I hope they forgive me, I didn't mean to cause the accident. I hope nobody died it is all my fault

Chace: Amanda I need you to calm down

Me: I caused an accident are the people okay

Chace: as far as I know yes

He looked at Kenny and excused himself while Ken sat next to me and took my hand in his hands

Him: don't cry you all are fine

Me: I was careless and stupid for not listening to both Mpho and Keegan when they told me I couldn't drive in that state

Him: it was raining don't blame yourself

He carefully pulled me into a hug and kissed my forehead

Him: I have to go I will be back okay

I nodded and he left, I took the pillow and hugged it +/- 20 if I am certain where in the accident. A nurse came and helped me on the wheelchair and we went to the bathroom, I tried to take off my clothes but it was painful

Her: let me help you

She helped me undress and helped me into the bathtub since I couldn't use my legs I felt frustrated and when we were done I brushed my teeth and she wheeled me back to my bed she gave me food and I the smell was off I told her to take it away she came with something light and I ate that but it still upset my stomach and she offered me a bucket. She walked out and I took my pillow and hugged it facing the other way. My parents came and I didn't have the strength to talk to them I just felt drained and my mood was off

\*KENNY\*

I looked at her breaking apart I knew she would react like this I am just thankful Chace managed to sort it out the case docketts are missing and cars have been swiped as well as her plates. Meaning the cops are chasing a ghost. I decided to drive home and I was greeted by peaches wearing a pink dress running to my direction with her chubby self, I scooped her up and walked to the lounge

Me: hey kids

They greeted me back

Me: you do know your mother is awake right?

Mpho: yes I am aware of that

He was very cold it hurts watching him act like this

Me: well she needs to see you guys

Mpho: let her sweat a bit she deserves it, plus we were fine without her this whole week

I nodded I could understand his frustrations

Me: while we are talking about your mother, how would you feel if I married her?

Naledi: wow dad the m word already

She nudged my shoulder

Mpho: well are you prepared for a lifetime of stress and irrational decisions made by one person to make sure that your life is a living hell? Well are you prepared to adopt your brother's child and raise her on her own and raise the children of a dysfunctional man and woman?

Naledi: he has already accepted us as his children and I am pretty sure he loves mom flaws and all if it was someone else they would have left us at first sign of trouble

Me: yes I am ready to accept everything you just asked and yes you are my children but please don't put me in a pedestal I was just worried about your wellbeing you are young and don't deserve to be alone

Mpho: who are we to stand against love between two people just don't make her cry and we love you, you have cared for us when nobody did so really you are the best we can ask for

I smiled and peaches kept pointing to the door hitting my face for attention blabbing and calling me dada

Me: thank you I just wanted to make sure you are all okay with this before I make any drastic decisions

They gave me a hug and I walked outside with my restless child, I sat on the last step and called the dogs to us I put her between my thighs as she abused the poor dogs

Me: you know one day they are going to bite you

She kept laughing and blabbing as she pulled their ears, honestly I wasn't watching here my mind was stuck on how I am going to tell Amanda about the proposal and about the baby I really wanted her to suffer being pregnant for a few while. I want to punish her and make her cry and beg for mercy but really I think Mpho is punishing her enough. I snapped out of it when Mpilo pulled me to her, one of the dogs turned and growled at her and barked viciously scaring Mpilo she screamed and held on to my neck burying her face on my chest while I slapped the dog away from us. It was very cheeky

Me: HEY! This is a kid move from her

It looked at us and moved from us the other dogs tried to move closer to us but she kept crying

Me: I am sorry baby

She didn't even want to look at them and I moved inside the house with her

Mpho: what happened?

Me: Bruce is one cheeky dog I tell

Peaches was still crying and it took a while for me to calm her down, I bought lunch and dinner for everyone

Me: I have to go see you mother and I have bought food for everyone you won't go hungry

Mpho: okay what time will you back and I think we should call the nanny for Mpilo

Me: good idea her numbers are on my fridge and I might be back late

Him: can I borrow your car

I rolled my eyes inside

Me: don't wreck it

I walked out and left them I bought food for Amanda I know my baby needs real food. I got in and she was still hugging her pillow facing the other way

Me: hey Amy

She didn't move she remained in that position, I touched her slightly and she looked at me. She threw herself in my arms and we shared a hug

Me: don't stress okay nobody died I know the pain of causing it but it will be alright

She nodded and continued to sob, she calmed down and we ate sharing a few jokes just to make her forget about her misery

Me: I like seeing you smile babe

I held her hand here it goes

Me: baby I was thinking that I want to spend the rest of my life with you

She looked at me confused with her confused smile

Me: I know you just woke up and you are confused and blame yourself for the accident but I am more concerned about our future together I want us to be together for ever and with this accident I realised I can't afford to live without you baby

Her: I am not going anywhere Ken

Me: I know Amy but I want you to have a permanent reminder of that, a symbol to unite us forever

She popped her eyes out

Her: Kenny can we...

Me: shh (I placed my hand on her mouth) I am still talking I love you Amy and I want us to be forever

Tears came out of her eyes and I held her left hand with the ring still on her finger

Me: I am sure you have noticed the ring?

She looked at it and shook her head in shock

Her: Kenny don't...

Me: marry me Amy please

She shook her head as I cut her sentence short I am not allowing her to leave me alone I need her in my life she is my woman

Her: Kenny I am still fresh out of marriage with my ex-husband I can't just jump from marriage to marriage ken allow me to know you fully first as we are dating that is standard but to get married after 4 well 5 months considering that month we were just friends I have kids to consider they have feelings and I have to talk to them

Me: I already had a conversation with the kids and they don't mind

Her: come on ken I have three kids and they need me

Me: four

Here we go

Her: what do you mean four? I have three oh yes four with Chesray but I don't think her mother would be accepting to him calling me mom

Me: if we count him in we have five

Her: what Kenny this is not the time to mess around with me? I have four kids

Me: I am not joking

I could see she was starting to get frustrated

Me: well we have Mpho, Naledi, Chesray, Mpilo and apples growing in there

I pointed at her stomach and she looked confused

Me: yes honey congratulation

She looked at me and the stomach and back at me and she touched her tummy before rubbing it and I kept scratching my head because I don't know what she is thinking

Me: we are having a child and the wedding will be when you are 6 months pregnant which is two months from now honey yay

Her: Kenny what do mean I am pregnant? Kenny we used protection right? I remember we did

Me: well.... I don't know how you are going to take this

Man I am not looking forward to telling her this

Me: remember the first night we got together. The first time we made love and connected as one well we didn't use protection and I thought you were on the pills

She looked at me like she was about to kill me while I said the last part fast

Me: and the shower sex no protection also

She took the pillow and threw it to my face

Her: why didn't you tell me we didn't use protection ken! I could have bought the pills

I looked at her I really didn't have an answer to her question, I don't know why I didn't tell her I mean Mpilo is still a baby

Me: well...

Her: Ken, Kenny! Kenneth Swanepoel

She buried her head on her one hand and looked at me she was speechless she didn't even know where to touch or what to do eventually she ended up touching her stomach with tears on her face. I tried to touch her and she pushed me away I allowed her to be in her feelings probably the hormones

## CHAPTER 42\*

### \*AMANDA\*

After Ken left I felt the world's weight on my shoulder I couldn't give him an answer I asked him to give me some time and space to think. I just found out I am pregnant and now he is asking for the wedding to take place in two months' time that is asking a lot from a person who almost died. My kids came and we had a heart to heart conversation with them and they forgive me after begging with every sentence. Physiotherapy was intense and after three three days I was discharged.



My parents begged me to live in my house for the time being and Ken understood. The therapy went on as usual and after two weeks I could walk, the therapists asked me to continue with running and exercising. Kenny came to check in on the kids and me but mostly my kids and they were very fond of him constantly begging me to go back with them.

If anyone told you I have been pregnant more than 3 times and I can handle it just know they are lying. Each baby comes differently I thought Mpilo was the worst but this one was making me do and say crazy things which I don't mean, my temper was on another level and I was easily annoyed. And today morning was no different, I woke up and made breakfast for everyone and fought with Mpilo because she was rejecting me feeding her I wonder how Ken coped with her.

After Mpho and Naledi went to school I sat with my mother my father went home he was worried about the house and thieves breaking in.

Mom: baby are you okay?

Me: I couldn't be better

I was lying I was missing Ken and I wanted to go back as well, but at the same time I am afraid of saying yes to him and find out he is like Simon and I missed all the signs. I am not okay because my baby is rejecting me I was gone a week and she is constantly putting a barrier and she is not even one yet

Mom: you are lying to me baby I know you very well and do you know why she is rejecting you?

I shook my head

Her: because ken has showed her unconditional love. He calls her peaches and bathes her, sleeps next to her telling her stories and makes her laugh

Mpilo: dada!

She smiled alone she forced her way down and I looked to where she was rushing off to and there was nobody there, she went into the kitchen and I could hear her giggle my baby is special

Me: I know I am just afraid that is all I know I dated Simon for months and he wasn't the man he claimed to be after marriage he changed and everything became horrible mama

Her: do you think Kenny will change like that? So you don't know him?

Me: I don't know I want to say yes but is it not to soon mama

Her: baby time is what you take it to be time can never measure your happiness you can date for 8 years get married and divorce after 3 days you can date for 2 days get married and die next to each other after marriage in old age

I looked at her amazed

Her: you can never guarantee where your marriage is going to take you. Don't hold back to the past let it be just that the past

She squashed my cheek

Me: I guess

Her: and look at how he loves your children baby he adores them

Me: I know

Her: good now let me tell you a story I have never told anyone and I hope it will help you make your decision

I held my belly when she said this and the baby reacted by kicking I smiled

Me: you always kick when your father is around

I looked up at my mother and she was smiling she also placed her hand and felt the kicks

Me: tell me mama

Her: well when I was in my twenties I fell in love with a man

Me: dad?

Her: thula wena I am still talking, there isn't anything I wouldn't do for this man he was single and his wife left him you know times were hard back then whites and blacks were not supposed to meet, we continued with this affair and when I returned from Joburg I met with your father. He wasn't my type of man because I was introduced to a new lifestyle, our families forced us to get married but I still loved the other man so I would continue going back and forth with them until I fell pregnant

Me: with me I am a white man's child?

Her: hai suka mahn you are not that special

Ouch

Her: anyway I found out I was pregnant my mother forced me to keep the baby a secret so I stayed in JHB for the duration of the pregnancy gave birth to a beautiful baby boy and I stayed some more months with them. Some neighbours reported the matter and they separated us along with my child, the separation was so bad they arrested me and I got heavy beatings for dating a white man, I never got to hear from him or see him. After

some time I learned to love your father and he understood my pain and we made you my beautiful baby when we connected for the first time. What I am saying is that love is something you should never take for granted baby when you find it make sure to keep because it is hard to find pure and honest love and I was fortunate to experience it both with you father and you know the other man

I nodded with tears in my eyes it must have been hard for mom

Me: what happened to your son?

Her: he was sent for adoption and he was adopted by another woman, she sent me one picture after I made contact with her and she told me to stay away from her baby

Me: I am so sorry, do you know anything else?

Her: nope nothing I just know he married his friend's twin sister and that is all, I was never allowed to make contact with him remember I don't even know if he got the best education. But reason I am telling you this story is because you deserve happiness baby, everyone deserves happiness even if it is for a short while

I hugged her as we shared a few emotional tears

Me: thank you mama

Her: my pleasure are you hungry

I nodded

Her: what do you want?

Me: avocado with mayonnaise and bit of chili on my bread with cheese and polony

She looked at me

Her: okay and how long has Mpilo disappeared into the kitchen for?

Me: I don't know but it has been a while

Her: baby alone in the kitchen our poor plates

I laughed

Me: give her a break I have been harsh on her plus she is a baby

Her: baby my foot, discipline starts at this age let me go and check on her

As she stood up Mpilo came back as if she heard my mom and rushed into my arms I picked her up and we sat there playing on the couch, my mother came back and joined me

Her: did you leave the kitchen door open?

I shook my head while I took the food from her

Her: that's funny its open now

Me: okay I will go and check

I stood up and went to the kitchen door to close it and I felt hands wrapping me from behind, I was about to scream when he turned me around fast and kissed me

Him: hey

I looked at him and felt relieve

Me: don't do that again

I hit him on his chest with my fist and he just smiled before he kissed me again

Him: I miss you

Me: I miss you too ken

He joined us in the lounge and both him and my mother watched me eat with sour faces. We continued with our conversation and Mpilo fell asleep in Kenny's arms.

Me: let me take her plus I am tired as well we need our nap

Him: I will take her to bed don't worry about it

Mom: and I will be here watching TV

Him: don't worry Mrs N nothing like that will happen

We walked to the bedroom and we all climbed the bed, Mpilo was between us

Him: do you have your answer yet?

Me: can I sleep and when I wake up tell you everything?

He nodded and we looked at the roof

Him: so let's play a game

I looked at him

Me: I want to sleep not play games

Him: oh just shut up and do as I say

I smiled

Him: so is Simon the first guy you slept with

I looked at him shocked I didn't expect that question

Me: is Ntombizodwa your first?

He chuckled

Him: no

I looked away from him and he held my hand

Me: no he is not, the guy who I lost my v-card to had a bet with his friends he never loved me and claimed that he did after I called him out. We dated for 3years in high school people thought we were the ultimate power couple I was kidding myself, after we broke up I went to university and that is when I met Simon

Him: that is a beautiful story

I hit him and he laughed causing my daughter to open her eyes and she smiled too before Kenny made her sleep again he picked her up and took her to her bed and returned to my bed pulling me closer to him fondling with my breasts and kissing my neck

Me: ken

I looked at him and tried to kiss him

Him: no. I will make love to you after the wedding so for now suffer like I am

He winked at me and I pushed him away

Me: you are never going to have sex with me ever again

He continued to laugh

Me: tell me about you

Him: my story is long and I won't tell you now I will tell you after I know you will never run away from me

He kissed my forehead

Him: rest I am sure my baby is tired from your walking up and down being emotional

Me: how do you know about me being emotional?

He looked up and smiled

Him: just take the nap dammit

Me: Kenneth

He smiled

Me: did you eavesdrop on me and my mom having a conversation is that even normal

Him: I did not do such

His voice was high pitch tone

Him: I simply know the kind of person you are, and I know lately your hormones are ranging out of control

Seriously no woman want to hear the words he just spoke especially if the cause of the condition is because of the very same man, he turned me on and denied me sex as well he another thing coming

Me: what? Kenneth are you trying to be funny? Am I emotional uncontrollable freak that you think you can say this words to me?

I took my pillow and hit him hard with it and he laughed pissing me off, he pulled me and tickled me and the baby reacted as well, no matter how angry I was I ended up laughing we continued talking and laying next to each other I felt my eyes slowly closing and my guards fell wore off

Me: I will marry you

I said this as I drifted to sleep laying on his chest I could hear him asking me to repeat what I said but I ended up in dreamland

#### \*CHAPTER 43\*

Two things can happen when you wake up from taking a nap one you can wake very refreshed and rejuvenated or you can wake feeling very annoyed and angrier than you initially where. For me it was the first one, I opened my eyes feeling so peaceful for a minute the world didn't exist it was just me alone on my bed I looked at Mpilo's cot and she wasn't in it. I got up and refreshed in the bathroom. I wore my gym clothes and tekkies preparing for the afternoon run.

I bumped into my mother and she was feeding Mpilo she told me Kenny left and that Mpho went to his friend's house and Naledi went out with friends. I told her where I was heading and left her there. The run was pleasant and the weather in the afternoon was very lovely. I thought of everything my mother told me, of everything that happened in my life and how I changed after Simon confided in me on my death bed. Everything hit

me how I have hurt Lucky a man who loved me wholeheartedly a man who has stopped everything for just for me, even if he came into my life with revenge in his mind he changed for me. I have been selfish and rude to him and I didn't even consider how he feel

I have been a terrible person to him and the fact that he left his life behind, his father, mother, brother most importantly his daughter. I have robbed him of a relationship between him and his child, now my daughter won't even know him as a father just as an uncle. Thing is after I was raped and tortured I went into a deep depression and he tried to get through to me but I pushed him away, I could see I was hurting him. I was draining the life out of him and he wasn't happy, I wanted him to be happy but I was mean and I didn't even consider his feelings after I left him. I made excuse after excuse to hide my true feelings and true reason of me living him. It would have been selfish of me staying in the relationship hurting him in the process, he might be hurt now but imagine him staying with a broken soul. I needed to heal first and find myself unfortunately it meant moving on.

On the hand Kenny makes me happy he loves me and makes sure I am well taken care of, and I love him. The way he accepted my children in his life, the way he never judged me the way he makes me complete I am certain he is and was the missing puzzle in my life I have never been this happy in my life. He has built such a strong bond with all my children especially Mpilo and I have never met love like his. I said yes last night

I paused running and it hit me I said yes last night, damn it I said yes. I am getting married

Guy: ma'am are you okay?

I looked at him and nodded I have no idea who he is

Me: yes thank you

Him: I am sorry I just saw a pregnant woman breathing hard I thought you were in trouble thing is you started jogging nicely and eventually started running fast and I saw that you might be deep in thoughts so I ran after you to make sure you were okay

Me: oh thank you

I just looked at him and walked away from him after he helped me straighten up my body and I continued to run in my thoughts, maybe my saying yes will make my life a better person maybe I will get the happy ending I deserve. I jogged back home and opened the door I didn't even check the time and it was 19h00 and my mother came to me and gave me a tight hug

Me: what is happening mom?

Her: I am sorry I thought you were lost you have been gone for so long I even called Kenny to help look for you

Me: why are you so dramatic mama?

I took my phone which I found on the table and called Kenny

Me: hi ken

Him: are you okay you left your phone home and your mother was worried sick

Me: okay baby I am sorry I scared all of you

Him: you didn't scare me at all baby I knew you were safe all along

Me: how?

My suspicions went up

Him: I could feel it

He laughed at his own words and we talked a bit before I hung up

Me: mama are the kids back?

Her: no

Mpilo came into my arms and rested her head on my breast she didn't even say much and I kissed her forehead

Mpilo: mama

She looked at me and I smiled this is the first time she called me mama which brought tears into my eyes

Me: my baby

I rocked back and forth with her while she looked into my eyes and smiled at me. I looked at my mother and saw her annoyed face and I knew it was about my kids and I had to do something

Me: I need to call them

I heard a car park at the gate I looked through the window and saw Naledi coming in she entered the house and looked at me

Me: where do you come from?

Her: I was out

Me: with?



Her: friends

Me: who dropped you off now?

Her: my friend's dad mama

Me: why didn't he come in?

Her: because I told him not to

She stood up and walked to the bedroom with a few shopping bags in her hand

Mom: we need to discipline her

Me: maybe it was innocent ma

She looked at me shaking her head and dished up for me, Mpho called me as I was about to call him and told me that he is going to sleep over. Mom came back with the food and Naledi told us she is going to sleep and she is not hungry. At eight Mpilo was very sleepy and she slept in my arms

Mom: a child who still listens

Me: mama please they are teenagers and need their own space

Her: don't come running to me when she is pregnant and when Mpho makes someone pregnant

Me: mom you love to overthink things

Her phone rang and she started talking to someone. Is it wrong to want to give your children freedom? I mean if you have given them proper teaching they can either choose to take it or ignore it. How many parents know what their children are doing when they go out, how many come from strict background with loving and understanding parents but once they go to universities they come back pregnant without degrees? It all depends on how your children are or am I a bad parent giving their children freedom to choose their own lives?

Her: that was my next-door neighbour

She made me snap out of my thoughts and I could see she was worried

Me: what did she want?

Her: she was telling me your father is out there shouting at people

Me: really?

Her: maybe it is one of those things

Me: what things?

She shook her head and asked me to take Mpilo sleep. I went to my bedroom and placed her on my bed, I changed my clothes and joined her.

\*ONE MONTH LATER\*

Finally I was six months pregnant I was looking like a hippo, my mother went home for a week and she came back after she and my dad had a fight, she didn't want to tell me what the fight is about but I could see she was missing him and she would cry when she was alone when she thought I wasn't looking, today was Mpilo's first birthday and everyone was running around making preparations. We were not doing anything big, Kenny was making most of the preps because he didn't want me to stress my baby at all.

At one almost everyone was there including Karabo, Busi and Jay and their children. Ken made a video call and Lucky answered, we sang happy birthday and she wasn't even aware it was her birthday she took the icing on the cake and smeared Ken on the face and everyone laughed including her. Mpho helped blow out her candles and music started playing there were drinks and food everyone was having a good time and I was tired I moved away from everyone and sat outside my body was tired and aching, I sat on the hammock and rocked with my baby in my tummy. I looked at the stars and brushed my tummy humming a song

Mal: hey there

He sat next to me and I sat up and looked at him

Me: hey

Him: how are you feeling?

Me: I am happy and tired at the same time

Him: I bet you are. How is the little one?

I looked at my tummy and brushed it before looking at him

Me: I don't know but I bet he or she is happy in here

I don't know the sex because of ken don't ask me why he just told me you will see soon why he is doing this

Him: I am glad he is, uncle Mal can't wait to meet him

I smiled when he said that I was happy that Kenny's friends saw me as family he placed his hand on my belly feeling my baby move.

Me: why do I have a feeling my baby is going to regret you being her uncle

He chuckled

Him: so are you ready for the wedding?

Me: what wedding? Oh Ken told me not to worry about it, he promised me we will have the wedding after giving birth I can't handle the stress while pregnant I want to enjoy this pregnancy

I went to bed after a while and slept. I won't lie things with my kids have been weird they keep coming in with shopping bags and they usually come late Kenny told me not to worry about it but seriously it was becoming worse each day

The following week I was sitting alone my mother went home to fix things with my father and my kids decided to go to Ken's house with Mpilo so I was bored alone eating cereal Busi, Karabo and Nkosi came into my house

Busi: hey girl

Me: hello guys

I hugged them all and went sat on the lounge I told them about my lonely week and how everyone abandoned a pregnant lady even Ken wasn't calling me at all

Nkosi: I think today we should go out

I fixed myself and drove to the saloon with Busi's car the way I was so tired of this baby I was ready to push her/him out of me

Busi: I think this hairstyle will suit you better

I looked at it and it was really a beautiful piece I looked myself in the mirror and remembered Simon calling me fat and ugly with certain hairstyles and this pregnancy made me fat and ugly

Me: no I don't think so it won't look good on me

Karabo: don't be stupid you won't know until you try it

I faked smiled and the stylist began doing my hairstyle. When we were done we drove to Mal's house

Naledi: mama please wear this dress

Me: why?

Her: I want us to have mother daughter day I miss spending time with you

I smiled and changed something is not right here

Me: why are you here by the way?

Her: uncle Mal offered his place

Me: I should have a word with this uncle Mal

Mpho who was wearing an expensive suit opened the door and came in smiling with Mpilo who walked to me and it was hard bending down towards her, he knelt down and put the most beautiful shoes I have ever seen

Him: don't they suit you mom?

Me: thank you baby and why is baby wearing this pink lovely dress, I love it and it looks beautiful on her and that suit baby I am sure the ladies are going to drop their panties

Naledi walked in wearing the similar pink dress but hers had the most beautiful details on

Me: this is lovely guys what is going on?

Mpho: we just wanted to do something special for you

My tears involuntarily came out

Karabo: I have a make-up artist for you, oh babe why are you crying?

Me: I don't know, I don't even know why Mal is allowing me to do this in his house

She hugged me and the lady came in she started applying make-up when she was done we took selfies Naledi held my hand and we walked out Jay who is Mal's wife offered me a ride in her car we drove to a park and when we got there I found my dad waiting for me he helped me up and took my hand in his

Me: baba

He kissed my cheek

Him: you look beautiful Lumka wami

I looked at him Lumka is my aunt his young sister

Me: baba I am Amanda

Him: yes I know that

He smiled and I walked with him when we got in the middle of the park it was decorated and people stood up as we made our way there I looked ahead and saw Kenny standing with the pastor and he smiled I froze as much as this is my second wedding I was not ready and I didn't even know if I was ready to go there I kept looking at him my fears got the better of me and I couldn't move I just kept brushing my tears away. I don't even have my vows most of the people here are just close friends and relatives what if we starting life wrong? We never even did the lobola negotiations oh my word we doing everything backwards. It is supposed to be finding love, paying lobola, getting married and having

kids after. Now I am having his kid, getting married, probably will pay lobola after this is wrong oh so wrong

Dad: baby relax I am here I know we didn't do things the traditional way but I promise we will do that afterwards

He wiped my tears and my whole body was trembling so badly I can't believe this is happening on my wedding day I look like a hippo and he promised me he will wait

Me: thank you

Him: sorry I am ruining your make up

I felt someone hold my hand I looked and it was Naledi

Her: come mama

I closed my eyes and I saw my mother's eyes she nodded and smiled before looking at Kenny and he looked at me I saw he was wishing for me to walk to him I know he was afraid of me leaving and now I am afraid of making a choice a choice that will affect my whole life. Mal, Chace, Arthur and Freddie as well as Mandla where standing next to him their wives on the other sides as my bridemaids

#### CHAPTER 44\*

My heart was beating fast I couldn't move no matter how motivating it was I was scared why was I feeling like this? I was about to turn and walk away to try and calm my nerves but my body refused

Dad: should we go?

I looked at him. Am I ready to go? Why are you afraid Amanda this man has done everything for you? He stood by you he made you laugh, he never made you cry he loved you in your weakest he made you believe in yourself. He has protected you from everything and has never even asked for anything in return. He loves my children imagine that he loves all of us he has been the pillar of strength for this family. When I nearly died my kids found a father in him. Now why am I scared of such a wonderful loving man?

Well to tell you the truth at first Simon was a beautiful wonderful loving soul he was there for me, he made me whole he completed me or so I thought, he loved his children and played with them every day but things changed after a few years he loved another

woman he valued her more than us and he made love to her in our bedroom with me watching he didn't even care that I was in the house or that I saw them. I am afraid of this happening with Ken what if....? Why am I comparing the two I too deserve to be happy I love Ken and my therapist did tell me I need to move on and to do so is to stop bringing the past into my future

I closed my eyes and opened them again, I took my first step forward and heard people breathing out loudly and some even laughing nervously around me why did I cause such drama that was unnecessary I love this man I walked all the way to him and the distance seemed long and thank God my father was here to walk me down the aisle. I stood in front of Ken and my dad gave my hand to Ken's and he kissed my cheek leaving us with the pastor

Kenny: you surely took your time

He whispered in my ear and I laughed nervously I could see the fear wear off from him

Him: you look beautiful

I was overwhelmed with emotions and I couldn't even answer him, the service went on and we were asked if we prepared any vow I shook my head and he looked at me

Him: Amanda Nzimande when I first saw you I was rude to you I told you to watch where you were going and you looked shocked to see such a rude man

I smiled remembering how we met

Him: the second time I saw you was on the same day at the parking lot fighting with a six month old being defeated by a six months old

I chuckled my baby can be stubborn and didn't change much

Him: when I got to know you and how fragile you are I wanted to leave you alone and move on but I fell in love with you and I loved you even before your drama. I love you more each and every day. Truly speaking I won't say I am happy with you being pregnant but here we are having a child, I wanted us to work on us and build us. I didn't make a move on you because I wanted you to heal first. Woman you are my eve I am you adam we belong to the garden of eden together minus the apple or fruit. These past few months together I got to meet the sweet, stubborn and sensitive nature to your side. I got to see you for you and know you for you even eating my food

I chuckled because he was really hungry and mad the day I finished his food for the third time in a row

Him: what I am trying to say is I have seen enough to know that I love you and I want you to be a part of my life forever you and our children I cannot imagine a future without either one of you we are a family and I will try my best to make sure we will become a

family for life, I know it won't be easy nor will we be happy all the time but I vow near to lay a finger on you, no matter how angry I can be I promise to stand by you and no matter how big the problem divorce should be the last resort because I don't think I will stop loving you.

My tears were falling uncontrollably and he put his hand on my neck and with his thumbs he wiped my tears and I looked down crying I don't deserve this man really. Mal was holding Mpilo from behind Kenny and together with her they gave him the rings. The priest prayed for the rings and gave them to us

Kenny: still my own vows.

Everyone chuckled

Him: with this ring Amanda I promise not to be perfect but to be the man you deserve because no one is perfect this is not a utopian world, I promise to love you and keep you in my heart forever. I promise never hurt you even if times get tough for us (he breathed loudly). Amanda with this ring I promise to stay with you through thick and thin, in sickness and in health, through the good times and the bad I promise to always stand by you whenever you need me, and whenever you call I will always be there available for you

The pastor looked at me

Pastor: did you prepare you something?

I shook my head and I repeated my vows after the pastor but I was clouded with so many emotions running through my thoughts. Slipping the ring through his feeling was a mission I was shaking and my eyes were blurry with tears

Pastor: through the power invested in me I now pronounce you husband and wife you may now kiss your bride

He pulled me closer to him and we shared a kiss everyone clapped hands and we broke the kiss we went to sign our marriage certificate and we were married in community of property. Chace, Mal, Busi and Karabo were our witnesses. We walked out to the reception area which was a few steps away, we took pictures first and the reception area was really beautiful.

He picked me up and walked with me, I won't lie and say I didn't want to be picked my legs were tired and I was really hungry when he put me down, I took my plate and dished up people were laughing I didn't care I only had cereal in the morning. I sat down they started with speeches before they could eat. Everyone said their speeches and I was listening attentively, everyone dished up and drinks were served. Mal stood up

Him: can I have everyone's attention please

We all looked at him and Kenny placed his fingers between mine and looked at me while I concentrated on Mal and what he had to say

Him: you look so beautiful Amanda

I smiled and showed him my ring I looked at Kenny and he was still not smiling just staring at my face

Him: okay I will make this quick and I promise not to ruin your day but to add to it

Kenny tightened his grip on my hand and I swear it was about to turn blue

Me: babe you are hurting me

I whispered in his ear

Him: I am sorry

Mal: well Amanda baby

He walked closer to me and my heart started beating fast I was scared for a few seconds

Mal: you know I was just waiting for something to confirm my suspicions and the day Kenny eavesdropped it was a blessing in disguise he didn't mean to, back to the issue at hand when I know but when I found out I was adopted I looked for my parents for a very long time and my mother told me what I wanted to hear but not needed. I saw mother's picture and looked for her only to find her married with a daughter, I told myself I will not disturb her peace nor will I shatter her family. I found my father and he told me everything before he died and he told me mother was looking for us but he changed everything so she could never find us. Amanda I am Daluxolo Melvin but they changed the e with an a for obvious reasons I am your mother's son

I saw mom standing up and looking at us she let out a loud sob, dad looked at mom he was very angry and sad at the same time

Him: I am your long lost brother

I couldn't even feel Ken's hand on me my whole world started moving slow and nothing made sense, he got to where I was sitting and extended his hands to me. I looked at Kenny thinking he will tell me it was joke but he looked at me all serious and I looked at Mal he really is my brother that is why he kept saying I should call him big brother and he always tried to reach out to me he is my brother I have a brother. I stood up and hugged him I ended up crying. Mom came to us and apologised Mal said he understands and forgives her, he introduced her to Jay who was Chace's twin sister

Chace: now I really have a young sister

People laughed



Me: I am not that young

Mpho: speech mom

Me: hai wena

Him: mom come on speech

Everyone started chanting speech speech speech

Me: okay okay

I stood up and took the mic

Me: first of all I would like to thank everyone here and the new friends I have made. Most importantly finding my brother who I can annoy. Being the only child is not right. Kenneth Swanepoel thank you for this surprise wedding I am really overwhelmed and emotional. But really thank you for everything I am sorry for being emotional it is not every day one get to receive a second well in my case third chance in love, you came into my life after everything bad happened and you made me forget my pain. When I first got married and divorced it was painful it is not easy leaving behind 15years of marriage although I got 2 beautiful children from it

Mpho: mom stop it is time to be happy not think of the past

I smiled through my tears

Me: I am sorry baby (I wiped my tears away) during that time I have seen the fires of hell, I have been called names and made to be insecure about myself I was always defeated and looked down upon I gave him chance after chance. I was even told I remind him of death and the new woman is his life

Kenny stood up and made me look at him

Him: you don't have to do this

He rested his head on my head and looked into my eyes with his hands on my neck

Him: stop

He kissed me and we shared a hug

Me: I can do this relax

I whispered in his ear. He nodded and wiped my tears off

Me: as I was saying when I met Ken I was broken I was a shadow of my former self, pieces of my have been ripped from me and I was made worthless. But Kenny he looked beyond all of that, he helped me pick myself up. I hadn't even known what true happiness is but he showed me true meaning of being happy, he loves me and takes care of me. He

showed me that my worth is more than just sex, looking after kids and cooking. I am more than that I am because of me and he just simply adds to my growth. Yes he is not my growth he adds, he doesn't dictate for me nor tell me what to do and what not to do rather do you want to do it and does it make you happy? He has been my support system and I love him. To the young women I want to tell you that never allow a man to tell you what your worth is and to reduce you to where they want you to end up. to young men build the woman do not destroy her if you love her, love is not that guy you think will make you whole it is the person who stands by you and uplifts you makes you feel good about yourself and stands by you not anything else. Material things is just a bonus

I looked at Ken

Me: I love you honey and thank you for everything

He stood up and kissed me

Him: I love you too Mrs Swanepoel

Everyone clapped hands, alcohol was flowing and we danced together. It was time to cut the cake

Busi: attention everyone

Me: again?

She chuckled

Me: more secrets and surprises

She laughed

Her: well this is a pleasant one this cake everyone is very special to all of us as a family and it has an even bigger surprise inside

Me: what?

She handed me the knife they wheeled in a different cake

Her: cut this one first

I took the knife and tried to cut the cake but it seemed like a balloon I stabbed it and a big bang filled the room blue colour blow out. Mpilo screamed her lungs out and ken took her in his arms

Her: it is a boy!

I looked at her confused and ken held my tummy with Mpilo it was then that it registered I am having a baby boy

Me: it's a boy

He looked at me smiling

Him: our boy

I held my tummy

Me: hi big boy

We shared a hug and he kissed my cheek, we cut the cake and they explained the meaning of cake and I knew it because it was explained from my first wedding. Kenny's father stood up and walked to us

Kenneth: welcome to the family and congratulations

I smiled

Me: thank you

I was about to go and hug him

Kenny: let's go sit down

I sat and the celebration went ahead as planned

Me: you need to talk with your father baby

After the whole celebration I told Ma to take Mpho and Naledi to church tomorrow and they all protested I gave up, Kenny and I left and we went home he dropped me off and drove back. I took off my clothes and walked to the bathroom. There was steaming water with rose petals on it and a letter written enjoy, there were candle lights.

I got in and my body felt relaxed. A man walked in carrying a violin and started playing whenever you call and I sank my body lower while he played. The water was white as if it was filled with milk and we could only see my belly popping out of the water, I was slowly starting to sleep when the door opened and Kenny came in lifted me up a bit and sat behind me

Him: did you enjoy today?

I nodded he ran water through my body and fondled with my breast under the water before resting his hand on my belly brushing it

Me: thank you it was beautiful

We sat in the in the water and made fun of everything that happened the guy playing the instrument bid farewell well it was very uncomfortable and we ended playing music through the speakers

Me: where did you get him?

Him: don't worry about it

He got out and picked me up we walked to the bedroom and he applied lotion to my skin and kissed my feet before he massaged them, he traced kisses everywhere and kissed my chest all the way to my neck and up his hands slowly caressed my things going up and down sending sensations through my body, the way my body was so relax and tired I dozed off after sharing a kiss with him and somehow in my dreams I was still feeling his touch, everything seemed so peaceful

#### CHAPTER 45\*

Waking up pregnant after a tiring day was really hard but I managed my husband was not in bed so I went to freshen up in the bathroom and wore my short silk gown I was lazy to wear anything under. I walked into the kitchen and found him sitting there typing on his lap

Me: are you hungry?

I walked to the stove

Him: don't worry there is enough food in the fridge so we can eat that

I walked toward him and sat on his lap

Me: I thought we were going to have fun last night

Him: I was in the mood but you ended up sleeping so might as well marry my hand

I laughed at him and rested my head on his shoulder

Me: I love you so much, where are the kids?

Him: with your mother and they are probably at your home

Me: hmm than that gives us time to ...

I unfastened my gown exposing my bare body to him

Him: baby please dress up not now

He tried to pull the gown up and I lowered my body to him and nibbled his ears we playfully fought and I kept teasing him having fun in the kitchen

Busi: are we interrupting something?

Mal: sies man respect your brother I don't want to see your naked body

I stopped and quickly wore my gown back on before standing from Kenny to face them I tried not to blush but it was impossible

Kenny: sorry I forgot to tell you, it's just they were tired and need a place to crash since we have a long journey ahead

Me: where are we going?

Him: to your home I promised your father to do the traditional wedding

I looked at him and my mouth was wide open again we are doing things wrong

Him: relax he understands we are already married he didn't object to us coming together, but you can go with Busi and Jay in your car or whatever car you choose

Me: I will take the other offer thank you

I walked upstairs and changed my clothes, ken got in with a tray of food he was behind me and rubbed my shoulders. I turned to face him and we shared a kiss

Him: I won't see you for two days

Me: I thought we were all leaving together

He chuckled

Him: I know how big you are with tradition so we will do it the right way

He winked at me we sat down and ate when we finished I stood up to pack. He pulled me in for a hug and we stood like that for a long time, we broke the hug and left him standing there packing my clothes.

Me: see you after our traditional wedding

I walked out and we got into Busi's car we rested in a B&B and drove home way early in the morning when we got there my whole family was there celebrating some making umxombothi and traditional dishes I greeted everyone and walked to inside the house. My mother greeted me and took me to the bedroom

Her: Amanda after everything is done can you please talk to your father

Me: what is happening?

Her: he is acting strange lately

Me: I promise I will have a word with him

I could see the sadness on her face

Me: mama is it because of Mal oh sorry I mean Daluxolo I don't even know what to call him

Her: I don't know but he is not his usual self, he constantly shout at me and we fight most of the time

I nodded and hugged her for comfort

Me: where are my kids?

Her: Mpho and Naledi are helping around as for Mpilo I struggled with her the whole night I am pretty sure she is still sleeping

I nodded, I walked out to look for Busi and Jay when I heard my aunties talking behind my back

Lumka: I can't believe Amanda is getting married again

Amahle: eish some people are lucky in love do you know that

Lumka: bhuti has been through enough drama did you hear Sibongile has a son while they were married

Amahle: she has always been a whore that one and I told you her going to work in Joburg was undercover for her to meet that lover of her's

Lumka: and it was a white man

Amahle: he was rich I am sure that is why her daughter bounces from man to man, they worship sex shame

They high fived laughing I could feel my blood boiling

Amahle: and to think she is 41 and pregnant that is rubbish man. My daughter is 35 and she is not married her career is flourishing but I am sure that man won't think twice about leaving Amanda for her

Lumka: ai suka wena she should get her own man

Amahle: unless she is using strong muti maybe that is how Sibongile got our brother through muti did you hear them fight that muti is coming out finally we are going to see miracles soon

Me: I cannot believe how you enjoy capitalising on other people's misery you would actually stoop this low just to prove you your point. When aunty Amahle you daughter won't get married because of your attitude and horrible comments if I remember properly

she had a beautiful man who loved her and made her pregnant but because he was poor you killed her child and broke the relationship

Lumka: AMANDA!

Me: no aunty remember how you came to dad and told him that Amahle was selfish and busy killing Owethu's children or don't you?

They both looked at me and I couldn't careless I won't allow them to tarnish my mother's name ever I might have been weak for love but I will never leave my cheekiness

Me: next time you guys have something to say it better be about your miserable lives and leave ours alone my mother has been nothing but good to you she has always supported you financially because you are her husband's family and this is the thanks she gets please fix your lives and get it in order

I was about to walk away when I felt pain and I held my tummy

Lumka: Amanda are you right?

I nodded and stood properly walking away from them I have never been this furious. I walked back in the house and found Mpilo awake she came to me and mama gave me food to feed her. I placed her on my lap and fed her while she kept telling me about some new cousins she met it did not make sense but I pretended to know what we are talking about. When she was done she got off and I heard cars mom peeped out and told me to go to my room.

I wore my traditional clothes and stayed waiting to be called. I couldn't even hear what was discussed I was with two of my cousins Owethu and Noku'thula they congratulated me and we catching up about their lives. They fixed my make-up and fixed my dress. After a while of waiting and getting bored and hungry my mother knocked on the door and told us I can come out

I followed her with my cousins and Mal winked at me while I smiled and he pointed at me and we were told to go back, after a while I heard shouting and celebration happening outside mom come and told us everything was done and she made me lay down as they slaughtered the cow telling me the ancestors are getting together I got out and joined my husband he was wearing a suit and of course my daughter was in his arms such a daddy's girl. I joined him everyone was sing traditional wedding songs we did all the required traditional ceremony and we sat in the tent while my family was telling me how to act at my in-laws home and I must be woman that ken wants. I know some should be done in his home and he told me he will try although he doesn't want to

Aunt Amahle offered me food and I shook my head before calling my mother and asked her to dish up for me and ken she understood and dished up for us. Ken feed me even

though I protested and when we were done he and his 'family' left first and I stayed for the night my mom didn't want me to travel at night and pregnant. I was about to sleep when I heard a knock, I opened and Naledi rushed into my arms

Me: you have been scares

She smiled

Her: mom you need to come out

Me: what?

Her: koko is her

Me: my mom should be here

Her: no dad's mom is here

I literally froze what does she want? I walked out with Naledi holding my hand and I found my ex mother in-law with Dimpho sitting there watching me

Her: Amanda

She stood up and tried to touch me but I moved back, my mother came out and she looked like she was about to kill someone. Dad held her and pulled her to him giving her a warning look

Me: what is wrong?

Her: you look beautiful and you are pregnant

I nodded

Her: you couldn't wait for Simon could you?

I looked at her and she bowed her head

Her: why would you after all he has done to you and all those young ladies and his father?

I saw tears coming out of her eyes she started scratching her head

Her: remember on your wedding day?

I nodded

Her: and I gave you food but Simon took it

I nodded



Her: you were supposed to eat that food you were supposed to be the one killing people you were supposed to be the one in jail and now it is him he is the one suffering and it is because I was selfish and I am sorry please forgive me Amanda

I wiped the tears from my eyes my misery was because of her all along

Her: my sangoma told me to confess and that my life will get better, I didn't get a cent from my husband's things because of the false investment he made he wasn't careful with his money and I used mine to bury him. I am broke and scared and homeless

I felt sorry for

Me: I forgive you ma and you can stay in our old house I am not using it

Ma: Amanda!

Me: mama it doesn't matter

Ma: she doesn't deserve your kindness kill this kind heart of yours

Me: it's over ma we have won

I whispered in her ear and she shook her head

Me: please trust me

Her: I heard you were getting married today

I nodded

Her: congratulations here is a gift from me to you

My mother snatched the gift and threw it into the fire

Ma: siyabonga now you can leave phuma!

Me: ma!

Ma: I have enough of this family and it's drama

Amahle: shame we also tired of your drama, are you going to tell the family you have a child outside marriage that we did not know of!

Dad: AMAHLE DAMMIT MAN! You love to be get yourself in other people's lives get your own life ghaa

We all looked at dad shock he is usually a peaceful man

Dad: let's go inside!

Everyone dispensed and I went to my bedroom finding Mpho sleeping with Mpilo and Naledi joined us on the bed. I can't wait to started my new life fresh tomorrow with Ken

\*CHAPTER 46\*

The following morning I woke up and fixed myself and Mpilo preparing to leave. We drove to ken's home while and did the remainder of the celebrations there. Everyone was singing traditional songs and Kenny couldn't keep his hands off me or our unborn child, not to mention Mpilo who was glued to him. The went by fast and everyone prepared to leave

Me: are you leaving with your grandmother?

I was asking my children

Mpho: yeah mom it's December boss

Me: so you not coming with me to Pretoria?

Him: no mama we talked with granny and she agreed we are staying with her

Me: I will be fetching your results then

Him: I will be back next don't worry about it woman please calm down and relax

I signed in defeat and looked at him

Me: okay I am going to miss you though

I kissed him and Naledi bye climbing in Kenny's car, he striped Mpilo in her car seat finally I can relax and rest at my own home without people shouting singing in celebrations and smoke everywhere. He got in and looked at me

Him: are you ready?

I nodded the drive home was long and I slept the rest of the way, I woke up when he gently touched my shoulder and we walked inside the house. He ran a bubble bath for me and I took off my ring putting it next to the bed on the drawer. I took off my clothes and took a well deserved bath. I joined him on the bed and rested my head on his shoulder he kissed my forehead

Him: you must be tired?

Me: very tired

Him: oh I am sorry you will be fine my love

Me: I missed resting my tummy on you, it was uncomfortable to sleep and I have been experiencing a lot of cramps

Him: should we go to the doctor?

I shook my head

Me: I think it's the stress and shouting at people

Him: yeah we did stress our baby but tomorrow morning we are going to see Chace and I am not taking no for an answer

I smiled

Me: I wasn't going to say no

Him: good because our baby might be in danger and he is tired

Me: maybe he is missing mommy and daddy connecting

I looked at him and he chuckled

Him: well daddy has sugar diabetes and high blood pressure and erectile dysfunction so there is no sex today. Plus I have to think of sexy model to get in the mood

I laughed at him and he switched off the side lamp for the night I thought we were going to sleep but he had other plans and started roaming his hand through my body. He turned me around and started penetrating me from behind. It has been long since we had sex and he kissed my neck, I turned to face him and the rest of the night was magical slowly and sensual

-

I woke up to fresh breakfast in the morning and I got up took a quick shower and came back to eat, the door opened and he came in chasing our daughter while she ran into my arms laughing she brought her lips to my breast and tried to suck on it

Me: I am sorry baby there is no milk here

I tickled her of me and she laughed he walked to me and we shared a kiss

Him: how are you this morning?

I honestly wish everything while remain this peaceful between us, we got dressed and drove to the hospital and went straight to Chace's office. The moment we stepped in Busi walked out smiling and the smell of sex was in the air making me sick

Kenny: are you okay?

Me: I am fine

Chace: I am sorry

Me: there is nothing to be sorry about you guys are married

I explained the pain I have been feeling and we went to the scanner and he applied gel on my lower and we could see my child

Chace: the cramps are the expansion of the uterus causing the ligaments and muscles that support it to stretch and I am ordering you to have enough rest

I nodded and we could hear the strong heartbeat

Kenny: is he sucking his thumb?

Chace: yes he is enjoying his thumb

I chuckled and looked at Mpilo

Me: baby your little brother is naughty he is sucking his thumb sies

She repeated sies after me and shifted her attention to Ken

Me: my baby loves this man

Chace: maybe they will get married

Me: that is nasty they share blood

He chuckled and helped me up, I got dressed and walked back to his office. He wrote on my file and referred me to Dr Voster

Chace: so Ken are we going on that trip?

He looked at me

Him: I haven't actually told her yet

Me: told me what?

Him: we will talk when we get home you can relax now

After Voster double checked we fetched the prescriptions and drove to his restaurant and ordered food

Him: you have to excuse me I need to send an email

He stood up and was about to leave when Mpilo raised her hand towards him crying and he picked her up and walked to the office with him. Nancy gave me my food and was about to eat when someone walked towards me. He sat down and looked at me

Him: hi

I kept staring at him

Him: you know you can say hello back

I looked at him confused

Me: sorry hi

He revealed a smile and I didn't feel comfortable around him

Him: sorry my name is Jetro Duma and I work at one of the universities I lost a lecturer and someone told me you are good at what you do and that students who worked under you know their stuff and that you are the excellent with students

I looked at I just didn't trust him but it is something I could think about

Him: here are my numbers and I think we can talk about this once in a lifetime offer

He gave me his business card and I noticed weird tattoos on his hands he stood up and walked towards the exist and I looked him as he left

Nancy: who was that guy?

I turned and looked at her

Me: he just offered me a job

Her: I think you should be careful he doesn't look like someone trustworthy and you do know what you got yourself into when you married Kenny right?

Me: what are you on about?

Her: oh Kenny and my brother where friends and a deal went wrong and my brother died his name is Kagiso and Kenny brought all his businesses he hired me because we are family, mostly because my family doesn't want money from him and Chace even when they tried to convince them but then he hired me and indirectly paying my family don't think Kenny and Kenneth Swanepoel are the same person

I kept looking at her and remembering his version of the story

Me: he told me Kagiso was shot in a robbery

Her: sure yeah that is what happened

I don't know if she thinks I am stupid or what but I was not falling for this at all someone between him and Kenny is lying

Me: so which one is it?

Her: all I can tell you is be careful

Him: Nancy why are you scaring my wife

We both turned and looked at him. He had the most deadly look I have ever seen in my life scaring me in the process my daughter was comfortably sleeping in his arms

Her: I am sorry I thought...

Him: you thought what? Get lost now!

She ran and he sat opposite me my daughter was still asleep in his arms

Me: ken is there something I should know about you?

Him: is there something you don't know about me?

I wanted to answer and I looked at my food and continued to eat I don't even know if I should tell him about the job offer or not his mood was just foul. His phone rang and he answered

Him: Ntombizodwa if you think I have time to mess around with you today I swear to God you will regret it before you can even hung up

I kept staring at him while he stood up walked away from me, when he came back he changed

Him: I am sorry about that

I nodded and looked at away

Him: should we go home

I nodded and we drove home in silence, what if he is worse than Simon and now we are married there is no out we are in this for life I can always divorce him right? but that will feel like I am giving up. why am I suddenly scared

Him: baby please I am sorry I scared you

I looked at him he had moved to the passenger side and was kneeling in front of me, he turned my body and I was between his arms I tried to smile but it was failing me I resorted to faking it

Him: look Ntombi and I got in a fight about Chesray and she is threatening to take him away from me. she is using my past against me

Me: what is wrong with your past? And why is Nancy's story different from mine?

He looked away and looked at me and planted a kiss, I hope he doesn't think I will forget

Him: by the way we are going away next week for a pre-honeymoon before I take you to our actual honeymoon

Me: where are we going?

He grinned and looked at me excited

Him: Spain Barcelona to be precise

I my mouth drew an o and I stared at him with disbelief who is this man

## CHAPTER 47\*

I woke up in the morning recalling the events of yesterday and how Kenny could switch from being sweet to deadly in two seconds I couldn't for the life of me figure out why he was lying to me and choosing to ignore me when I talk to him, he ignored all my questions and kept talking about the freaken holiday this holiday that all I wanted was to be at peace and hear the honest truth coming out of his mouth.

A cold breeze hit my tummy and I looked down only to see a smiley face on my belly done with toothpaste and tiny hands on both sides of my tummy. I couldn't stop smiling and the door opened

Him: good morning yummy mummy

He was holding Mpilo's hand and she seemed excited to see me awake and rushed to my side

Me: good morning

I picked her up and kissed her cheek tickling her I love the sound of her laughter it just makes me happy

Him: last night we didn't talk when we came to sleep

I looked at him whose fault was it?

Him: okay I am sorry

Me: why are you sorry?

I wanted him to tell me the truth to be honest because I could feel he was hiding something from me something that could destroy us

Him: I don't know I just don't want to see you this sad please baby I love you

Me: what does Ntombi have on you tell me?

Him: I will soon not now you are not ready

He kneeled in front of me and took my hand in his and looked into my eyes

Him: can we talk about this some other time please you need to trust me. Do you trust me?

I wanted to trust him I really did

Him: please tell me you trust me

I nodded and he looked at me smiling

Him: I love you Amanda and I don't want to lose you ever

He rested his head on my chest and I brushed his head, he stood up and left me. I got up and took a quick shower before dressing up and walked into the bedroom, I saw the business card and remember the job offer I received yesterday battling with my thoughts I decided to leave the card on top of the drawer and joined ken for breakfast he literally cooked for me and I had tears on my eyes it smelled lovely so divine I almost dug in when I he handed me the plate

Me: since when can you cook?

Him: well you never asked if I can cook

Me: are you going to do this the whole year?

He chuckled

Him: no this is the first and last time I am a man and you are a woman

Me: that doesn't mean I have to cook

Him: where have you heard of a husband cooking for his wife

I looked at him

Me: when he loves his woman he cooks

Him: then he is a sissy

I playfully threw the bread in his face and he threw it back

Him: some people are starving and you are playing with food

I chuckled continued eating

Him: it's not funny

Me: I liked it when you cranky in the morning

He walked over to me

Him: does it make you happy?

I smiled

Me: it makes me wet

I winked at him and he kissed me wrapping his hands around me, he broke the kiss and walked behind me and squeezed my breast

Him: let's make a deal

Me: what deal?



Him: never to go to bed without talking to each other

I nodded and he walked back to me and we kissed again until Mpilo complained and we focused on her, he was busy feeding her

Him: babe you know we are out of food

Me: we can go shopping later

He tossed the keys to me and caught them, the events of my accident played in my head and I remember the pain the glass cutting through my flesh, being thrown out of the car, people screaming above me and all I could think about where my kids

I put the keys on the table

Me: I don't feel like driving

He looked at me and I walked to the lounge

Him: so we are going to die of starvation?

Me: we will go together please ken and you can drive

Him: babe I am going to be busy I thought you and Mpilo can bond

The more he kept talking the more I could remember the scene

Me: stop please!

Him: baby calm down

Me: I just don't want to drive is that fine with you can we just drop it please!

Him: okay we will drop it relax, breathe with me

I didn't notice I was not breathing he walked over to me and hugged me tightly my whole body was trembling

\*KENNY\*

Planning this wedding has been stressful I had to make sure she was not aware of anything and tried to keep her as calm as possible, we really need to work on her discipline with her children although I was the one pulling strings she couldn't handle their independent behaviour. Two night before our wedding we decided to do a bachelor party and things got out of hand real quickly. Ntombi came over to me and we had a conversation

Her: so you are going ahead and marrying her?

I could see the hurt in her eyes and I hugged her because as much as she has hurt me I understand I have hurt her as well

Me: look I am sorry that I couldn't marry you, I know I should have done it but I was afraid

Her: what changed now I loved you Kenny we were together longer than anyone and you just broke me I cannot believe I had to cheat to make you notice what you want in life.

Even though I cheated I love you Kenny I am hurt, this hurts, I miss you baby I really do

I wiped the tears from her eyes and she started sobbing loudly

Me: I am sorry too

She moved her hand up and down my back

Her: can you do me a favour?

Me: what?

Her: can you make love to me one more time, please?

She begged kissing my neck

Me: I can't please don't make this harder than it is

Her: do you still love me?

Me: no

Her: the truth Kenny I want the truth

Me: stop this

Her: you still love me I know it

Me: stop it

I left her and joined the guys we continued to drink and somehow I felt weird and got into my car everything became blurry and I had a blackout. I woke up in the morning with Ntombi next to me naked and smiling she was brushing my hair and I was also naked

Me: what is going on?

I tried to get up and my head was spinning, she kept smiling everything didn't make sense. Like why was I in her house? How did I get here? Who drove me here? What the fuck happened last night?

Her: we connected last night

Me: fuck!

I got up I knew I have messed up, and I know Amanda won't forgive me for this. What the hell happened? I called Chace and he picked me

Me: what the fuck happened last night

Him: I have no idea, I just woke up from your call we all slept in the club you are the only one missing

I looked at Ntombi and hung up, I literally felt disgusted with her, I wanted to kill her but she is a woman and they deserve to be protected

Me: you know out of all sick things you could have done this is the worst, you disgust me and you are pathetic

Her: that is not what you were saying last night when you were inside me

Me: I was drugged by you, you are sick you need help. You are a disease a sick pathetic little whore, I respected you as a mother of my son but you took things to the next level

I got up and dressed tossing her money

Me: since you want to act like a whore might as well treat you like one

I left her house and found my car in the drive way. I got in and drove home. The wedding took place and she was the most beautiful woman in her wedding dress carrying my little son. I looked from the corner of my eye and caught Ntombi staring at us with tears in her eyes, I kissed Amanda in front her and she turned and left the venue she refused my son to come to the wedding but she had the audacity to come here after everything she did, I had to make her pay and I will make her pay God knows her days are numbered.

After taking my wife to Chace and seeing my son we drove to the restaurant to have a meal, I looked at my phone and received a video from Ntombizodwa about my drugged night and I excused myself from Amanda. She blackmailed me with my child and threatened to take him, clearly she has forgotten who I was. To make things worse Nancy took it to her to expose my life to Amanda. Nothing hurts more than seeing her sleeping questioning my character. I wanted her to wake up to a smile and I together with Mpilo decorated her tummy for her in the morning.

This morning I decided to spoil her to breakfast and she was happy to see me cook, we promised never to go to bed angry. I can't lose her over stupid thing I cant lose her because of Ntombizodwa or my past. What broke my heart further was watching her refuse to drive because of her fear, because of the accident that caused her to have fear. I knew I have to help her get over her fear, I love her and she deserves happiness. I need to sort out my mess without involving her and mostly she needs to know who I am her life is in danger. And this trip is what we need, I will come clean to her when we in Spain and she can't walk away from me.

Me: it's okay I will go with our daughter

She just nodded and I took our child and drove to the mall with her, I couldn't get rid of Amanda's reaction on my head if she could break because of an accident my confessing

is going to kill her all because of one selfish woman who can't let go. I brought the whole mall thanks to my whining daughter and her tantrums I just couldn't refuse her anything. She deserves everything. we drove home singing to her favourite song. Chace called disturbing us

Me: what's up?

Him: I have fixed all documents for everyone so we are leaving for two months we are leaving next week

Me: you know I have teenagers right?

Him: same here but they will come back before us and stay with the nanny I hired for them

Me: fine I still have to talk to Amanda

Him: she will be happy don't worry be romantic and about Ntombizodwa Freddie is working on it she wont have a comeback after this and you must hack into her files and make sure that you delete everything

Me: got you

I hung up and looked through my rear mirror to find Mpilo sleeping I swear this kid loves to sleep but I won't blame her after what she did I might as well be bankrupt because of her

\*CHAPTER 48\*

\*AMANDA\*

After ken left I went back upstairs and called the Jetro guy we set up an appointment to meet on Friday I wanted to clear my mind and keep busy taking the job was the only thing to keep my mind busy. I asked our helper to sit down while I did the dishes and decided to cook and sweep there and there just to stop thinking, thinking about the accident and how it impacted mine and other people's lives, how my children nearly hated me and.... Stop Amanda stop it happened and it is in the past now, God has given me a second chance I must live it.

The door opened and Ken walked in carrying our sleeping daughter

Him: what are you doing?

Me: cleaning

Him: we have Petunia don't we

He looked at me and I looked down

Me: I just wanted to do something it is not her fault

He went to Mpilo's room and I continued to cook, I felt hands wrapping around my waist and he kissed my ear

Him: I am sorry for shouting

I turned and looked at him and we shared a kiss and he tasted my food

Him: come help me

We walked to the car, after switching off the stove

Me: did you buy the whole mall?

Him: she wanted these toys

Me: she is 1 she is a kid ken look at all of these toys she won't play with all of them, and these sweets?

Him: she wouldn't stop crying for them

Me: clothes?

Him: she liked them it is not my fault she has such good taste at a young age, talent I tell you

Me: ken you need to stop spoiling her like this

Him: she is too adorable to say no to

I closed my eyes there is no use arguing with him

Him: relax baby

He kissed my cheek and I shook my head helping him unload the bags some were heavy and I couldn't take them and waited for him to pick them up. He sat on the couch and pulled me to him sitting on his lap

Him: how would you feel if I told you next week we are leaving?

Me: for?

Him: we are going to Spain remember?

I looked at him in disbelief

Me: are you serious?

Him: like a heartattack, it will be us and my friends

Me: the kids?

He nodded

Him: let's start packing

Me: school?

Him: they will be back before us we are staying there until you give birth

Me: you have this figured out don't you

Him: you know it my cupcake

The whole week we were shopping for all the kids including the one inside, on Friday we were fetching my kids from my parents and their phones were off.

Me: Kenny I have to call someone I made an appointment for a job

Him: what job and who is the person?

Me: don't worry too much about it my cupcake

I texted Jetro and told him I won't be unavailable today due to personal. I switched off the phone and open another one calling my children, I didn't want to be disturbed while on pre-holiday mood.

Me: they are not answering

Him: it's fine we are going to them

We drove to fetch my kids ken and Mpilo were singing their song on repeat until we reached my parent's house. They saw us and rushed to greet us

Me: I tried calling you why didn't you pick up?

Mpho: mom when are we leaving?

Me: why?

Naledi: I just want to go home

Her voice was down and it broke my heart

Me: what is going on?

Mpho: mkhulu has changed he broke our phones and mom and he keeps shouting at gogo

I looked at ken and breathed calmly we walked inside and my father was not here I found my mother just sitting watching TV when she saw us she was full of smiles and we shared a hug

Me: mom what is going on with you and dad?

Her: nothing baby don't worry about it

Mpho: gogo one day he is going to kill you

Her: relax baby I told you not to worry about it. We sat the whole night and still he didn't return. The following morning we went back home and had an early rest because we still had to go to church. We woke up early and rushed to church, I sat next to Ken Mpilo got off from my grip and was walking around church making noise

Me: baby come here

I whispered shouting at her and she laughed and walked around calling me and ignoring people, she walked to the pastor and he ended up picking her up and preaching with her and she was also talking back. I was pressed and rushed to the bathroom I went to the one outside because I knew there were less people, I was about to go in when I heard Ken's voice behind me like he was stalking me

Me: where are you going?

Him: I was bored I need excitement

I smiled shaking my head and walked inside the cubicle and he walked in

Me: mara Ken what is happening to you?

He walked close and tried to kiss me

Me: we are in church honey let's have some respect

He smiled

Him: God created us in his image so he knows my needs

I chuckled and pushed him and did my business while we had conversation when we walked out people were staring at us and we laugh until we went back inside the church. After the service we drove home and had lunch. We finished our packing and went to sleep.

\*LUCKY\*

Finally I set down in Spain and brought a house for me and my child, I needed to be alone and away from relationships and drinking I had to fix myself I had to be there for my son. Two months in I made friends and found a job I couldn't depend on Kenny for

everything I didn't want to be a burden on him. He has a family to take care of, he married Manda and I just have to accept I lost her for good if she was mine she would have come to me she would have chosen me but she made her choice. I left the life of crime, as much as it was exciting it wasn't for me.

\*KENNY\*

Monday morning everyone woke up excited we all got dressed and prepared to go to the airport, Chace gave me our documents and everything was good and ready to go, the flight took hours and finally we landed and drove the rest of the way to a beach house

Her: wow this place is big

She wrapped her hands around me and I kept smiling at her, the kids rushed to the bedroom and threw themselves on the beds and it was lights off. The house was a huge mansion which could fit everyone, I walked to the bedroom and dropped our bags and returned to the lounge. She was standing on the door looking at the view feeling the breeze brush against her skin she had a smile on her face and was brushing her tummy, there was a piano close by and I sat next to it and started playing, I felt her arms around my neck and I continued playing remembering my mother telling me which note to play and how to play it, I ended up playing Beethoven

Her: when did you learn to play?

Me: it has been a while now

I stood up, picking her up and made her sit on top of the piano while I continued to play I could feel the way she was looking at me and admiring me it turned me on. I stood up and kissed her, I separated her legs and kissed her while I got in between her legs. We took off each other's clothes and with each thrust her legs accidentally hit a note, she rolled her body back and I played with her sensitive breasts while she released soft moans causing me to change my pace from the excitement going fast and faster and relaxed when she reached her first orgasm but that didn't stop me I wanted her and I knew she wanted me, after the steamy session I picked her up and we continued in the bedroom the way I was so tired after my climax we ended up sleeping.

When I woke up her leg was above mine and she was still sleeping with a smile on her face. I heard voices downstairs and I knew the other's had arrived. Since we got here first we took whichever rooms were available, I looked for our clothes and remembered we started on the lounge and our clothes are there. I wore my other clothes and rushed down to pick our clothes

Chace: so did we miss anything?

Me: nothing, where are your kids?



Busi: they are sleeping I am also tired

Mal: this is so nasty I am looking at my sister's underwear

Chace: now you feel what I feel when I hear you and Brunhilda (Jay Chace's twin) having sex?

We all laughed, Busi and Jay excused themselves

Mal: Kenny I am still angry you betrayed my sister like that, sleeping with Ntombi

Me: it wasn't my fault Ntombi drugged all of us

Mal: I told you to stay away from her

Me: well I did try and we have bigger problems than that woman. Jetro has made contact with Amanda that should be our biggest worry not Ntombi, Amanda is in trouble

Chace: okay enough we will work this out okay it is a good thing we are all here, he has contacted Busi as well and I have put her in so much danger this past couple of years we need to be careful. I don't have a good feeling about this and I know he has revenge on his mind

Me: plus I need to come clean with Amanda and I am going to do it with all of us here

Chace: I don't know but I hope it won't backfire

The door opened after his last word

Lerato: hello family

She was holding Arthur's hand and we all greeted her

Lerato: where are the ladies?

Chace: tired and in their rooms most probably

Arthur: and Kenny what are you doing with those underwear?

I rolled my eyes and they laughed. Arthur and Lee (as I call her) shared a kiss before she walked to look for Busi and Jay

Chace: I guess he is also pregnant

Me: fuck you

I was about to walk up when Amanda walked down looking beautiful as ever in her dress and greeted the guys sitting next to Mal. I walked upstairs dropped everything and walked down to find them chilling I sat down and we continued talking general stuff, she stood up and walked to the kitchen

Me: what is it with you and the kitchen?

Her: well for one I am hungry and baby needs something

I sat with her as she made a sandwich and we joined the guys as they sat outside, we sat on the hammock rocking back and forth while she ate, the guys decided to braai some meat and the ladies came to join us taking pictures and pulling Amanda from me. The kids woke up and Mpilo was glued to me even after I introduced her to Leon who is Chace's grandson and same age as her but she wasn't having it. The kids were formally introduced to each other and Amanda and they walked away from us being friends

Busi: Kenny can you please tell your wife to take it easy

Me: what is she going?

Her: cooking although I told her we can handle it

I smiled and got up dodging Mpilo after I tricked and Leon to be friends to find Amanda cooking I pulled her from the stove and the ladies clapped hands. She looked shocked and smiled at the same time. The door opened Freddie walked in with Chesray and a beautiful lady I swear she is a model the boobs the hour glass figure the face the fair skin and fake hair the long legs and the ass man we are in trouble

Chesray: daddy!!

He rushed to me and we shared a hug I just couldn't take my eyes off the lady she was so hot

Freddie: hello sorry I am late

I couldn't hear what he said I was fixed on the woman I tried. I heard people groaning at the back I was about to turn when I felt a hot slap across my cheek I looked up and saw how hurt and angry she was, Busi was giving Chace an earful about how she is not going to deal with his wondering eyes and Jay pulled Mal out with his ear, Arthur chased after Lerato and here I was looking into my wife's eyes trying to reassure her, she was even holding her belly with her left hand as a reminder that we are married

Me: love

Her: don't!

She turned to Freddie

Her: sorry I didn't get her name

Freddie: this is Angelic and she is 28 my future baby momma

Her: she is pregnant?

Freddie: nope she is still going to be pregnant

Angelic: not now in the future right boo bear

Both Amanda and I looked at each other with our mouth open trying to hide our laughter and walked away from them

\*CHAPTER 49\*

\*AMANDA\*

Dinner was awkward because the men had to make sure not to make eye contact with Angelic. I kept looking at Ken and he tried by all means not to look but he couldn't help it made me angry reminding me a bit of Sindy and Simon situation and I didn't want to remember that part of my life. I am not going back there ever I am going to make sure he remembers he married me

Mpho: mom if looks could kill I bet dad over there will be dead

I gave him the death stare and he looked at his food immediately

Fortunate: mom why are you angry? Are you and dad going to wrestle in the bed after this and him screaming Busi baby you are the best and you screaming yeah yeah calling dad the beast?

We all looked at her shocked and Busi choked on her drink while Chace kept laughing at his daughter

Me: well thank you everyone for dinner I think we better go rest now

Everyone bid me goodnight

Ken: give me a kiss before you guys go sleep

He was brushing my tummy I guess he missed the WE part

Me: I said we are going to sleep. WE

Him: oh okay

He stood up and walked with me to the bedroom there is no way I am leaving him here with Angelic my trust issues are still very low

Him: goodnight everyone

He followed me and we walked to the bedroom I took off my clothes and wore my silk night dress he went to the bathroom and I took a book and started read until he came back and joined me I put the book next to me

Him: honey

Me: what?

He looked at me with his heavenly smile

Him: are you jealous?

Me: of what that kid no I am not actually I am tired please switch off the light I want to sleep if you don't mind I am still jet legged

Him: honey you cute when you jealous

I looked the other way and he switched off the light before turning me to him and positioned himself under my belly, he kissed my forehead and I closed my eyes. Was I really jealousy of course I am the way he looked at her when she entered he couldn't even hide how taken he was by her beauty she is perfect the way she was kind of reminded me about my past life when I was young and carefree stop it Amanda it is not worth it.

I woke in the morning and he was not on the bed I rushed to the bathroom and fixed myself and changed my clothes I wanted to watch the view and maybe swim. After I was done I walked to the lounge looking for my husband and I found them yes all of them staring at Angelic as she was doing yoga outside they were even drinking coffee. I walked to the kitchen I didn't even notice what I was taking I just took whatever food I found and sat outside on the hammock watching her doing yoga as well. Tears came out of my eyes as I brushed my tummy watching her move her perfect body, her breast was still firm and she was slim and beautiful I cannot compete with that looking like a bloated balloon.

I kept stuffing my food and wiping my tears as she ran up and down she was wearing a see through crop top and short shorts, I kept looking at my body and hers and the sobs escaped funny how they love you when you are skinny the moment you start looking like a bloated piñata they have wondering eyes and find the next best thing which is younger than you how dare he do this to me? He fucken made me pregnant and now perving over her this is not fair

Him: babe are you okay?

I looked at him and started throwing him with the chips I had and he ducked them and pressed me against his chest, I struggled to swallow the chunk of chips in my mouth nearly choking in the process. How dare he ask me that?

Me: why don't you go to her and ask her that stupid question

Him: baby calm down

Me: I saw how all of you looked at her, she is sexy beautiful and here I am looking like an elephant and it is your fault!

I couldn't hold in the sobs

Him: honey looked at me

He lifted my chin up and I refused to look at him until he kissed my forehead and I looked at him while he wiped the tears from my eyes

Him: you look beautiful, the pregnancy is giving you the most beautiful glow you can ever ask for, I have never seen a more beautiful woman like you, not girl not lady but a woman. I love you sweetheart don't ever doubt that

I just looked at him I know he really has eyes for me, this pregnancy is playing with my mind. No it is not he was staring at her perfect body just now like an idiot

Me: you were staring at her I saw you

Him: was I really?

Me: don't fucken play stupid with me, I saw you!

I snapped at him before landing a slap across his stupid face and he stopped me before I landed another one

Me: how could you ken?

He slowly shook his head and pulled me to him before he planted a kiss

Him: I am not attracted to her, if I was I would have done something with her, but I love and respect you baby trust me when I say I love you and your crazy jealousy self

Me: I am not jealous

Him: really

He pointed at three bags of lays laying next to me and he took one dipping it into the cheese sauce I brought

Him: my wife is crazy

I chuckled and he lowered his head to my belly

Him: baby why are you making mommy this crazy

I continued to chuckle and brushed his head while he talked to my baby he lift his head and wiped my tears from my face

Him: stop doubting yourself you are gorgeous and I love you okay

He pinched my cheek and helped me down pulling me to the ocean and when we got there he lifted me up and walked in the water before releasing me and the water splashed us he scooped some water in his hand and dropped them above my head and we sat by the shore

Me: I am sorry I slapped you

Him: don't make it a habit because when I retaliate it will be called abuse

I chuckled and he kissed my cheek

Him: I like this chubby cheeks of mine

I knew it I am fat in his eyes now that Angelic is here

Me: are you saying I am fat?

He couldn't answer and kept stuttering his mouth, I was about to stand when he smiled and pulled me to him

Him: yes you are my fat cupcake that I love, my addiction, don't get it twisted whether you are fat or skinny main fact is you are mine and mine alone forever and ever till we both die

I rested my head on his shoulder

Busi: I don't think you should be feeding on romance all day

I looked and smiled

Her: come the baby must be starving by now

Him: what about me?

Her: you and the men in this house can starve for all I care the baby is more important

She winked at him and he smiled helping me up

Me: we need fresh clothes first

He took off his shirt

Him: I am fine like this

We joined everyone for breakfast and I sat next to Mal and Kenny with Mpilo on his lap. After breakfast he bathed her while Chace bathed his grandchild. They came back wearing animal rompers my baby was a skunk and Leon was a lion wow

Busi: Chace!

Me: Kenny!

We said that at the same time looked at each other and laughed I decided to take a nap and walked to my room on the way I heard the men talking in a discreet place

Ken: did you do as I said?

Freddie: yes I am sure she is enjoying China as we speak

They chuckled I didn't get the joke

Ken: good and Mr Wong is he please with the merchandise?

Freddie: he won't let her go like that he loves these African bitches

Ken: where was my son when all of this happened?

Freddie: well I asked him to play with Angelic while I and his mother sorted out business she and that other bitch will never see Africa ever again let alone South Africa

Chace: good now that is out of the way I have a business meeting and I want you to look at it Kenny

Ken: I am on it just give me his name, and company I will even find out who he is sleeping with

Chace: that is my boy

Mal: and I will find the ladies to work inside the company unless you want me to be hands on

Chace: sorted

Freddie: and I will tail him

Arthur: and I have ordered new set of guns from Iraq plus we have new recruits to help us make better deals

Chace: I will make contact with him we cannot lose this deal he is a big fish

Ken: the bigger the better

I was about to leave when the door opened and Mal looked into my eyes as tears formed what was I listening to what is happening? What business is this? why are they discussing in secret?

Mal: Amanda

I turned and walked away from him I entered my bedroom and closed the door breathing loudly and holding my stomach as the pain got worse I wiped the tears from my eyes thinking about what they were discussing about. Something is not right, what have I gotten myself into

Ken: baby open the door

Me: go away!

I felt cramps again and I sobbed trying by all means to breathe calmly, what is happening?

Ken: honey are you okay?

I struggled to stand up and opened the door while he got in and found me struggling to breathe he rushed to my side and brushed my back

Him: baby calm down breathe

Chace came in while I was struggling and they helped me to the bed, he rushed out and came back with a stethoscope and felt the sides of my bell

Chace: Amanda I need you to calm down you are stressing the baby

I nodded while tears came out uncontrollably

Ken: honey calm down

He was wiping the tears from my eyes

Me: don't touch me

I sobbed while he looked at me

Ken: honey please

Chace: wait outside it is okay

He walked out while Chace continued to examine me

Chace: Amanda look at me

I shook my head

Me: can you just go and tell ken he can touch me when he is ready to be honest or else he can sleep with that bitch he has been admiring in the morning

Chace: you saw that

Me: fuck you and get out



I turned and took my nap that I so badly wanted

## CHAPTER 50\*

I woke up from my nap with a heavy headache and went to the bathroom to brush my teeth, I walked out and went to look for Ken I need answers and I need them fast I want him to be straight with me and I wanted the truth problem is am I ready? Did I want to hear what I was going to hear?

I walked into the lounge and the whole house was quiet everyone was gone, I bumped into Lerato and she looked equally shocked to see me

Her: oh hi

Me: hey

Her: I thought I was alone

Clearly because she was all packed ready to go

Me: where is everyone?

Her: they went to a water park

Me: oh

I really wanted to talk to Ken I really had to

Her: I am sorry I have been a bit offish with you it's just I never thought I would see the day Kenny got married let alone be without Ntombi I mean they have been together for years and all of a sudden you come in marry him and get pregnant than boom you and Mal are related

Me: yeah I get your point

Her: I am really sorry

Me: you have your bags with you are you going somewhere

She looked at her suitcases and looked down

Her: I have to leave I cannot pretend anymore

She really has been down since I saw her I don't know her at all but I could tell, she sat down and wiped her tears looking at me

Her: I guess it is easy to offload to a stranger although I know in the long run you won't be a stranger. I don't even know what I am saying

She started crying and I pulled her for a hug and she sobbed loudly

Her: it is just so hard pretending everything is fine when everything is not, we have been engaged for a long time, he has been pushing for a baby and marriage I just can't do it at all. It hurts losing your first child and having anxiety about it and being pressurised to have another one it hurts so much I feel so overwhelmed

She wiped her tears looking at me

Her: I have been through so much and can only take so much. I can see it kills him every time I get a false pregnancy and he...

I knew that pain very well the pain of a man seeking what he is missing outside and coming back pretending like everything is normal

Her: what hurts the most is he went out and had a child with someone else, and now he is forcing me to accept his child but I don't think I have the strength in me, I cannot do this I can't it is too much

Me: did you talk to him?

Her: talking to him leads to him suggesting a surrogate mother, thing is I can have children with him but I don't think I want to have children with him, I had an abortion seven months back and hurts that I cannot talk to him about it but I cannot bring a child in this broken relationship it is toxic considering the life they are living, I even stole someone's file to pretend like I cannot have children so he won't bring the topic up. I can't do this anymore I just can't

Me: what life are they living?

I was just stuck in that statement what is it that I am missing?

Her: you don't know? Oh honey I hope you are ready to travel and hide from international criminals who most probably will kill you and your family

Me: what?

My heart started beating fast and I felt like my breathing was being restricted

Her: they are white collar criminals I found out the day I nearly lost Busi because she was in a coma for years I had to raise her children with the help of everyone. More especially your husband they called him dad chace daddy and Arthur father

Criminals I am married to a criminal just the confirmation I wanted she stood up and gave me a tight hug

Her: I am sorry for dropping this bomb on you but I have to leave I cannot stay thank you for listening to me tell everyone I left

She walked out with her bags, why am I attracted to the wrong kind of men? Why can't I have a simple man who will lead a simple life? Why am I pregnant with his child, why am I married to him?

I got up and started drinking water because the pains were getting severe with each second, I knew this was the false labour pains it was just a passing moment. I walked to my laptop and opened my emails to see the report cards being emailed to me at my request and both my children passed Mpho was finally going to matric and Naledi grade 11 I couldn't be more proud and to think they were my two kids who I thought was my last and I had to meet these two brothers who ruined my life, and I have nobody but me to blame I couldn't stop falling pregnant

The door opened and the house was filled with talks and laughter again my kids came to give me a hug and I hugged them back showing them their cards they were excited and jumped up and down for joy and joined the rest of the kids outside. My eyes met with those of Kenny and I stood up about to walk to my room, I am stuck in another country I know nobody here there is no escape at all

Arthur: hey uhm Amanda have you seen Lee?

I looked down and looked at him with a sad face how do you tell someone sorry the love of your life walked out on you

Me: she decided to leave she said she was done pretending and she packed her bags

I looked at ken

Me: something I should be doing as well

Kenny: hon what?

Me: she told me about your lifestyle honey and I don't think I can handle this I want to leave

Kenny: honey no I am not allowing you to leave

Arthur: she just left like that

I nodded and was about to walk out

Kenny: you are not leaving me honey I am not allowing it

Arthur: I need to find her

Me: Kenny just let me go I need space to think can I just think? Is it alright with you?

Kenny: you can think here

Me: no I want to go can I go please can I?

I turned and he held my hand

Kenny: I cannot allow you to leave

Me: why not?

Kenny: because of Jetro

Busi: which Jetro?

She looked at Chace with anger on her face

Chace: I don't know how he got to know about us

I heard a slap and Chace's face was turned the other way while he rubbed his cheek with was red

Me: is this the Jetro who contacted me about the job offer?

He nodded

Me: so it was all fake just to get to you

He nodded again I can't do this what if he hurts Mpilo or my unborn Child not to mention Naledi and Mpho I cant risk losing my child

Me: can I just go please?

Busi: Chace why do you keep doing don't we have enough money?

Chace: babe please

Busi: don't babe me don't you fucken BABE ME!

Almost everyone was angry at each other the arguing got intense

Jay: everyone please stop! Can we not have a normal happy time?

She looked very upset and everyone was shocked to see her this weak she always seemed like the type to be strong

Jay: can please be happy can we?

Mal held her hand and kissed her while wiping her tears

Jay: I didn't want to tell all of you this way but I have no choice

We all looked at her

Jay: first of all

She walked to me

Jay: congratulation on your marriage it is not every day you find a who will love you the way Kenny does and I have seen it with my own eyes the way he looks at you and kisses you. I am glad you have found out Melvin or Mal or what is your other name

Mal: Daluxolo

Jay: my Daluxolo, yes I am glad you have found him as your brother and I hope you and him build on your relationship as brother and sister like me and my twin here

I looked at both her and Mal

Jay: Busi my sister please don't break my twin's heart you and the kids are all he has and he loves you dearly

Jay: Arthur after I am done please go and find your woman and forgive her for what she will tell you all I want to say is life is too short guys and I am the living testimony of this

We all looked at her and she took out her phone and placed it on loud speaker

Jay: Lerato get your ass here we need to talk

She hung up and we waited for her to come, after a few minutes of silence and waiting the door opened and Lerato walked in still crying

Jay: I am glad you are back please tell Arthur everything

She looked at Jay shocked and eventually told him everything she told me, everyone was quiet and shocked while Arthur processed everything

Arthur: you lied to me!

Lerato: I am sorry

I could understand where they both are coming from, he jumped up and Kenny held him

Lerato: I am sorry I shouldn't have killed our child I know but I haven't healed from my first miscarriage I couldn't handle being pregnant feeling the baby move and when it was time to be born he choked and died, it haunts me that I murdered our second child but I couldn't I am sorry Arthur I really am

Arthur: save it, it is best if you leave right now!

Jay: nobody is going anywhere! We need to fix this so we can have a happy holiday all together

Arthur: I cannot live with this witch

Lerato wiped her tears and I wiped mine as well, Ken wanted to hold me and I pushed him away from me I could see he was hurt as well

Jay: please we are going to make my last holiday memorable

Chace: what do you mean last holiday?

Mal: are sure you want to do this?

Chace: what is going on?

She removed her wig which I really thought was her hair and Busi let out a loud wail

Jay: I am sorry, but I have cancer I am dying Chace

She let out a loud sob and Mal held her close to him

Jay: I have six month left

Chace: no I am taking you to Switzerland

Jay: it is no use

Chace: I will do my best

She stood up and held his face

Jay: Chace please I am sorry and I love you

I buried my face on Kenny's chest I might have not had time with her but I knew she was a sweet lovable feisty crazy person and now she had just a few months. If I was in Mal's shoes I would break down I don't think I can be without my Ken he is my better half, the love of my life I love him I wont handle losing him

## CHAPTER 51\*

Everyone was quiet listening to Chace pleading to his twin and it broke my heart when he broke down and Busi helped him up taking him to their bedroom. I looked at Ken and signalled that we should go to the bedroom as well. We walked up and he closed the door will I sat on the bed and I looked at him

Me: is there something else I need to know apart from you being a gangster?

He looked at me and nodded

Me: will it cause me to have labour pains?

He looked down

Him: Amy what I am going to tell you will definitely make you hate me depending on how you look at it

He sat down and held my hand

Him: two days before our wedding

He breathed loudly and I closed my eyes

Him: two day before we threw a bachelors party to celebrate my last night as a single man

Me: okay

Him: and Ntombizodwa invited herself she wanted us to try again

I looked into his eyes

Him: she was pleading that I come back to her but I didn't I turned her down and walked away from her

He looked down

Him: the whole night we kept drinking and I could feel something was different so I walked to my car and I had a blackout

Me: what happened?

I suddenly felt a bit hot and I felt sweat all over my body

Him: I woke up in the morning and she was naked so was I

I stood up, how could he two days before our wedding

Him: I swear I didn't sleep with her intentionally I was drugged

I kept looking at him, a part of me believed him but I couldn't it too much information for one day too much

Him: please honey believe me

How could she do this to my ken? Why is she this desperate?

Me: where is she?

He looked away and walked towards the window

Him: I had her shipped to China together with your former friend they are to work for Mr Wong

Me: doing what?

Him: what he wants them to do

Me: so you sold them?

Him: I wanted to protect you I had no choice

Me: we all have a choice! You decided to sell them

I was weak for a moment and I realised I didn't eat since morning and I was too hungry, I walked out and heated some leftover food, Jay was cooking for the kids. Mpilo came to me and I picked her up because I knew she was tired it was past her bedtime. I walked to our bedroom and I shared my food with my daughter and Ken. We didn't talk I just didn't have the strength left in me to fight and I didn't want to cry I have been crying for too long. I tucked my daughter in and ken went to the bathroom, when he returned he switched off the lights and I faced the other way. I couldn't sleep as much as I tried I just couldn't. I got up and watched ken and my daughter sleeping before I walked out

I opened the door and walked to the ocean, I kept walking trying to clear my head it is too much don't I deserve a happy ending? A peaceful life the one that I can raise my children in peace. No Amanda you are not going to cry. While walking I found a beach party I wanted to turn back when some kid came to me

Him: hello Ms do you want to come join us?

I looked at him and shook my head

Him: come on live a little

I shrugged my shoulders and went in looking at everyone enjoying their drinks and partying hard

Him: can I get you anything

Me: no thank you



Him: so can I get you name?

Me: I am old enough to be your mom you know that

He chuckled

Him: yeah they all say that until they are under me or on top whichever way you like

I chuckled as he said this

Me: wow you so full of yourself unfortunately for you I am married and pregnant

Him: really I thought it was just a bulging beer belly

I shook my head as he walked away dancing

I looked at everyone having a good time and somehow I zoomed out to the conversation I had with Ken about Ntombi I could picture them having sex, more like him laying there and her having his way with him. She raped my Kenny it is rape isn't he doesn't deserve my anger why am I angry over a bitch who raped my husband. He has stood by me through a lot of things. Why should I act differently now that he is the one in this situation? He needs my support why did it take me coming here to know how to act in my marriage, I am married to Kenny and the best way to sort things out is to communicate.

Amanda how old are you and why do you act like this is your first marriage? I need to face this like an adult I am an adult, a mother a wife. I am the one who should create my own happy ending. How I face problems in my marriage will determine how it will end. Should I give up now that I find out he is a gangster giving his history growing up? Should I walk away because a woman couldn't let go? No you need to build your own man Amanda those other women are coping and Ken loves me I need to show him I love him too. Why am I even in the kids territory? I can be pathetic at times

I stood up to leave when I heard a familiar voice calling me and I looked it was Khensi, Jay's daughter

Me: what are you doing here?

Her: I could ask you the same, shouldn't you be with your husband?

I chuckled she is her mother's daughter this one

Me: shouldn't you be sleeping?

Her: I am old enough besides I need to clear my mind from my mom's disease and I need a man who will love me and take care of me

Me: honey you don't need that trust me you need yourself only don't ever depend on anyone to make you happy depend on yourself

She smiled

Me: let me guess your parents don't even know you are here

She laughed

Her: please don't tell them

Me: yeah good luck with your man hunting

I walked back to the house and snuck back in, I walked into the bedroom and took a pillow and knelt down. when I made my vows it was in front of God and now that I am trouble doesn't mean I don't have to invite him, I know he is my sole provide and my saviour

Me: dear heavenly father, I am kneeling in front of you and asking you to please intervene in my life. I am asking for guidance, I know that this is a test in my life an obstacle that has been placed in my life and like Job Lord I will never turn my back from you. I know I have forgotten you these past few days and focused on my pain but I will never question you because I know you have given me strength from within and my faith in you will get me through this. I know you never put your children through trials they wont be able to overcome. My marriage Lord is no mistake and this child Lord is a blessing from you. I ask that you strengthen my marriage and help me over look all the pains I have acquired so far, Jesus I seek comfort in you and ask you steer my life in the right direction. I cannot and will give up on this marriage the first divorce was painful as it was but I finally found happiness which comes with a heavy burden. I ask that you please look after Kenneth because of his lifestyle I ask that you protect him and guide him Lord. I ask that you be with my whole family blood and friendship Lord we are all facing problems that threaten to tear us apart and leave us questioning, but I know with you my Lord nothing is too big or too small to handle please show yourself Lord and bring the joy back into our lives. Just like that song, with Jesus I can take it, with him I know I can stand, no matter what may come my way my life is your hand. And I am putting our lives in your hand Lord and asking you that your will be done, the Devil cannot win and he will not win I ask this in you name heavenly Father in Jesus name and in through the Holy Spirit Amen

I tried to stand and I felt hands helping me up I looked up and Ken was helping me up he helped me to bed and I noticed my daughter was not in our bed

Him: I took her to her bed

I nodded and he kissed my forehead while we cuddled and we slept like that. I know that my Father will provide and he will lift my burden from me. I cannot punish ken from this that were beyond his control if it was another man he would have called me names and said nasty things for cheating while still married, for having a child with his younger brother. They would have looked at me weirdly for being raped as if it was my fault and

asked for it. But Kenny he stuck by me and loved me even when I endangered his unborn child he was here. With my daughter being kidnapped he was here and looked for her, no other man would go through this length ever they would have left a long time ago but Ken accepted my children as his and he stayed with them while I was on my death bed. Only a few men can do that. Know what thank you Jesus for bringing him in my life the devil is a liar and he will lose this battle I won't allow him to break my marriage never

..

I felt fingers going up and down my arm and I slowly opened my eyes with a smile,

Him: cupcake wake up

Me: no ken I am tired and it is still early

Him: no it is actually 1 in the afternoon you slept the whole morning

Me: stop lying

Him: I wish I was get up now

I sat up straight and checked the time indeed it was 1pm

Me: I am extra tired

I rolled back and laid facing up he rested his face on the side of my belly and we interlocked our hands and he kissed my belly over and over again and tickling me until I farted

Him: did you just fart?

Me: no your son was passing some gas he is bloated

He chuckled

Him: we need to talk

Me: no we don't, we have said all we needed to say last night from now on we are moving forward and we are going to enjoy our holiday and make it memorable

He looked at me

Me: I am serious

I got up and took a shower when I was done he came in carrying a tray of food and he fed me. We joined the others outside and they went on jet-skies and I sat with Mal who wasn't feeling like having fun

Me: why are aren't you joining everyone look even the kids are having fun

He looked at me and smiled

Him: no I would rather be here with you

I smiled

Me: so how are you coping with this whole situation?

Him: I am trying sis I really am but it breaks me every time I think about it. Here is the women I thought I would grow old with slowly dying due to an illness slowly sucking the life out of her, but you know she taught me there is more to life than fucking and waking up in the morning sneaking girls off. She has taught me to live and feel how it feels to love and be loved and I can only return the favour by making her happy.

He looked at me smiling

Him: every day I wake up and find something new to do because it means it is another day I have with her. I don't know how I will be without her but we see as time goes but for now her happiness matters more to me

I moved closer to him and rolled my hand around his and we watched everyone having fun. My brother sure is one strong individual and I admire the love he has for his wife.

..

Months past and we spend Christmas and new year together as a big family we all put our differences aside and made it memorable to Jay, I video called my mother during Christmas and new year only to find her living at my house. Mal was next to me when I asked what happened and she told me my father accidentally became violent with her and she is giving him space and I could see Mal was angry but she assured us everything was fine. Our children except for Mpilo and Leon went home to start school afresh

It was February 14 and my due date was coming closer one week left. Our husbands left to plan something special and we were left with Freddie apparently it will take the whole day. I just finish bathing wearing my bathrobe when the door opened and Freddie barged in I covered myself and looked at him

Him: I am sorry

He kept staring at me swallowing hard

Me: can I help you?

Him: oh sorry I am looking for Angelic have you seen her?

I shook my head I have seen her the whole week. He kept staring

Him: sexy uhm I mean sorry

He turned and left I took my phone and tried to call Kenny at first it rang and then went straight to voicemail. I joined the ladies and told them what happened and they all told

me how much of a pervert Freddie is. We were chilling when the door opened and Angelic came in

Angelic: hello everyone

She did a catwalk and Freddie came to her

Him: did you fuck him?

Her: I did more than that

She chuckled and looked at the door

Her: it is show time

She smiled and the door opened a group of men came in carrying guns they surrounded the place and Jetro came in carrying my daughter and Busi's grandchild

Me: give me my daughter

Jetro: shut up

Freddie: so you have been working with him?

Angelic: more than that love

She slipped in her wedding ring and kissed Jetro while we all stared shocked

## CHAPTER 52\*

\*KENNY\*

After hearing her prayer I knew very well she has forgiven me and I had to do all I could to protect her. The truth has set us free and now we could move on although she made it clear we will not have sex ever as part of her punishment for lying to her. it's been hard watching her sleeping naked next to me tempting me with her big beautiful blossom but the lady wants what she wants and there will come a time where I will return the favour soon.

Today was February the 14 and I wanted to make this day special for her she deserves all the happiness she could ask for, 3 months into marriage and already we were tested in

the worst possible way starting with a lie but now we are building in love. Just one more obstacle in my way Jetro

Me: do you think freddie will handle this

Chace: he is a piece of shit but I am sure he will

Mal: don't start Chace but really I should have stayed

Arthur: fuck that he is the one who brought Angelic into our lives

Me: yeah but my pregnant wife is in that house I don't want her to go through labour while that thing is watching her

Chace: okay but we need a carefully planned out strategy to go in there

Mal: and I have one

\*AMANDA\*

I was sitting on the couch watching my breathing just so I could calm down, I cant afford to have my baby born like this I cant give birth without Ken by my side

Freddie: you going to pay for this!

Jetro: shut up, now you and your friends stole from me and made R30billion is that not so

Freddie: so?

Jetro: I want my money in full

Freddie: that will never happen not as long as I live

Jetro: want to bet

He took out a gun and shot Freddie we all screamed as blood came out of him

Jetro: sorry ladies now I want each and every one of you to look into your bank accounts and fork out my money I will be sitting here all calm everything is fine

Jay: hmm nice to be you right

My body was trembling as he kept playing with Mpilo who clearly wanted to come to me, he looked at one of his men

Jetro: Rocco don't you want a beautiful wife, one who wont cheat on you?

They laughed

Jetro: we can raise this one and make her your wife

Me: don't talk about my baby like that!

Mpilo got so scared she over filled her nappy with poo and he threw her from him

Jetro: she stinks she has dirtied herself stupid baby piece of shit!

The way my baby fell it broke my heart

Me: she is a baby for crying out loud!

I walked to my daughter who was crying and I picked her up, nothing hurts more than when someone shames your baby

Me: can I go change her since she disgusts you?

Jetro: no give me my money sweetheart

Me: stop it you scared her to this point now allow me to change her diapers

Jetro: if you don't shut your mouth and get me my money I will shoot not only this one but also the one growing there. Imagine that Kenny without you and his children

He stood up and pointed the gun to my stomach

Jetro: now get me my money bitch and stop worrying about anything else

Me: we are not the ones who took your money you got the wrong people the ones who should be here are out there free

He pushed me hard and I fell, this gave Lerato an opportunity to take the kids to another room Busi tried to move closer to me when he hit her with the back of a gun blood came out of her forehead

Jetro: ladies you are making this hard just get my money or your men will find beautiful corpses laying here starting with her

He walked to an unconscious Busi and examined her face using his foot

Jetro: maybe we can keep a few

He chuckled

Jetro: 2 minutes that is all I am giving you oh and dear

He turned to Jay

Jetro: I am sorry about your condition to bad something this beautiful has to be killed because of selfish cancer

He pointed his gun to Jay

Jetro: let me do you a favour to show how serious i am

Jay: you can shoot me but I am not scared of a little bitch, any way allow me to get into your head for a second

Jetro: what did you call me?

Jay: I called you a bitch because that is what you are, and allowing your wife to sleep with other men. Freddie of all people he is a walking disease I am pretty sure he has infected her by now. Last year he was diagnosed with HIV and Herpes

She chuckled

Jay: if you slept with her I am pretty sure she has it and now you have it, word on the street will be poetic justice. Well you are a big boy aint you a pretty progressive husband who allows his wife to sleep around not just with Freddie but with everyone around you hahaha man you really are stupid. You need a strong woman like me unfortunately I am off for good

She was about to walk away when he kicked her twice on the stomach and she fell gushing out blood from her mouth

Jay: and you hit like a bitch too, no wonder she slept with so many men including my twin's son

He punched her and slapped her twice

Me: stop it you hurting her

He moved to me and punched my chest

Jetro: I told you stop making this difficult for yourself

Angelic: honey let's just kill them

Jetro: you

He turned to her and shot her in the head it was all happening like a slow movie as her body collapsed on the floor with her brains on the wall, I am amazed she had brains at all

Jay: my plan work now run while he reels in what he done

She whispered to me while I was trembling badly for a moment I was sure I was going to pee myself or give birth right there. I looked away from the body and locked eyes with Ken he was holding a gun and he winked at me

Jay: now!

I stood up and walked run to my find my kids, it was hard moving fast with a heavy body

Jetro: so you want to play a game don't you?



He was shouting but I didn't look back I heard Mpilo crying and walked to that room locking it behind me, I found Lerato on the floor and I took both the kids hands and moved them away from her,

Me: babies let's sing. If you happy and you know clap your hands

I needed to distract them and let them live a little this was too much for them, they looked at me like I was crazy

Me: if you happy and you know it clap your hand

I pulled Mpilo and clapped her hands for her and did the same to Leon they started laughing when I tickled them. Everything stopped when we heard a gunshots they both clung to me and I couldn't stop trembling as much as I wanted to reassure them I couldn't

Me: it's alright babies. Uhm two little birds sitting on tree one peter one paul fly peter fly away paul come back peter and come back paul. Don't you want to sing for mommy come sing with me

They both started crying and someone banged on the door. I held the children tighter and held back my screams, the person kicked down the door and I held the children's ears preventing them from looking and seeing who it was while my eyes where firmly shut. I heard the person talking and trying to hold me but I pushed their hands away and continued to try and protect the children

Ken: AMANDA!

I opened my eyes and it was Ken I threw myself in his hand and we shared an embrace

Him: I FOUND THEM!

He shout and moments later Arthur came in looking at Lerato

Arthur: what happened?

Me: I don't know I found her unconscious and the kids where crying

He picked her up and ken looked at me

Him: is everything okay?

Me: the baby is fine but I don't about the others one moment we were at peace I don't where they came

He rested his head on my head as I was blabbering nonsense

Ken: shh it is okay I am here you are safe now relax

We walked down and found Chace torturing Jetro in the worst possible inhuman manner ever, I covered my eyes and ken brought my face closer to his chest. And I couldn't help it

I just sobbed, we nearly died for money for power and for greed. We all walked to our cars Mal picked Jay and Arthur managed to wake Lerato up, while busi was still unconscious. And Kenny picked Freddie up. The drive to the hospital drive was awkward and quiet, when we reached the hospital Jay and Busi as well as Freddie were admitted and we all waited for the doctor, my adrenaline was still kicking for survival mood. The doctors came

Doctor1: Busi van Zyl

Chace: yes

Him: she is conscious now and I see from her files had had an operation on her head

Chace nodded

Him: well she is lucky to have survived that knock anymore knocks on the head and she is dead

We all looked relieved

Doctor2: and you are all here for Brunhilda Booysens

We nodded

Her: I am an oncologist and I have sad news, she hasn't been taking her treatment and that has derailed her progress, unfortunately the cancer has spread and there is nothing we can do

Chace: did you know about this Mal?

Mal: can we see her?

She nodded and showed us to her room, we decided to separate, Ken, Arthur and Lee decided to see Busi while the rest went to see Jay unfortunately nobody wanted to hear about Freddie which made me feel sad. We walked in and found her hooked to machines

Mal: baby why?

Her: I am sorry, I decided to take alternative medication

She looked down

Mal: who gave it you?

Chace: tell us now!

Jay: I was tired of taking over 30 pills I just wanted to die peacefully

Chace: who gave you the medication?

She looked away and cried while Mal held her hand

Mal: baby I am not angry I just want to know

Her: that lady who approached at the hospital when we found out I had cancer offered me the medication and seemed to work

Mal: it's not working love it was killing you

He couldn't hold it in and shed some tears

Mal: you are dying sooner than expected

She cried as well

Jay: I am sorry

Chace: sorry is not going to heal you

I wanted to walk away but Mal came close to me and cried on my shoulder we sat on the chairs and watched Chace and Jay arguing and eventually crying together, I felt pressed

Me: excuse me I am pressed I need the bathroom

Chace looked up quickly

Chace: oh my God you are going through labour

I looked at him and chuckled

Me: funny

I was about to go to the bathroom and he held my hand, Mal rushed out to call Kenny

Chace: I am serious your body is still going through flight or fight mood I can literally slap you and you wont feel anything

I laughed at him and Ken walked in with a doctor and they took me to another room

Me: doctor I just need the bathroom not birth

I felt liquid coming down and felt something pushing through

Me: oh my word I am in labour

Ken began panicking and he was pacing up and down

Me: can you just stand or go out you are irritating me

Ken: sorry

He moved closer to me and held my hand and head as the pains began to kick in and I knew it was time to push. The doctor spread my legs and asked me to push, my body began to sweat and the pains intensified. No matter how many times you have been

pregnant nothing prepares you for the pains of labour, and each baby come in the unique way

Ken: push baby push

Me: I am pushing! Why don't you take this baby and put it inside of you and then push it out and tell me how it feels

He looked at me with a shocked expression

Me: I am sorry honey

Doctor: okay he is almost here one last push

I squeezed Ken's hand and pushed until I heard a faint cry of my child

Doctor: oh he is here

Ken moved and cut the umbilical cord, and I pushed the placenta out while they cleaned him out. Ken moved to me carrying my son and he handed him to me and I brushed his cheek

Ken: I need to fetch someone I am coming

I nodded while I held him close to my chest and he came back carrying Mpilo

Him: peaches meet your baby brother

She looked at the child and looked away holding on to Ken

Me: baby

Her: no!

Me: okay

He sat next to us

Doctor: have you decided on a name

We looked at each other since it is still valentine although ruined by the whole saga

Me/Ken: Valentino

We looked at each other and smiled

Me: Valentino Nqobile Swanepoel

Ken tried to pick him up but Mpilo pushed his hand away and I couldn't stop laughing sibling rivalry already, fight for daddy here we go

## CHAPTER 53\*

I couldn't stop staring at my son he was so tiny, it reminded me of the time I held Mpho for the first time, his father was so proud of him and wouldn't stop staring at him. I guess those are the special memories I will take from that marriage not to mention when Naledi was born his little princess. And Mpilo my God she was blessing as well the way Lucky was crying looking at her. And now here I am staring at my last born. Yes last born I am not having any more kids. I can't handle being afford to be pregnant and push anymore this is not for me. I am done it stops with my little Valentino

Ken: he is handsome now stop staring at him

I looked at him smiling and he took pictures of us all even though Mpilo didn't want anyone either than her father to hold her. She was literally acting like a small baby. They joined me on the bed and I rested my head on his shoulder holding my tiny son

Him: I am sorry I ruined Valentine's Day

I chuckled

Me: well it turned out to be the best thing ever

He kissed my forehead while Nqobi started crying

Him: you should feed him

Me: he is still full

I took out my breast and started breastfeeding him ken didn't stop taking photos Lee came in with Busi who had a bandage around her head they looked at my child and congratulated us, Lee took him from my arms and started playing with him

Lee: your children are so pretty

Me: thank you

Lee: you are going to have a tough time chasing away the boys with that one

She pointed at my daughter who was playing with ken

Ken: I wish but no I am not

I looked at him is he distancing himself from my children

Ken: what? She loves her father when I say no she says no

He looked at our daughter

Ken: no

Mpilo: no

She shook her head smiling more like blushing

Me: it is good seeing her smile after she was pushed off thrown off by Jetro

Ken: he did what?

I told him what happened and his body got tensed, Chace walked in while I was explaining

Ken: is he still there?

Chace nodded

Chace: no don't do it please I will finish him, you tend to be over brutal at times allow me to handle this

Lee: anyway I am glad your oldest kids are not giving you trouble

I chuckled

Me: well Mpho is a gentleman who loves and respects women, he hates wrong things as for Naledi that is another story she has always been mean from an early age

Busi: yeah I can exchange her for Charlotte any day

Me: what your daughter is sweet

They all looked at each other and laughed

Busi: let me say this if my daughter died the devil will reject her because she will be the queen of the underground

Me: she was sweet to me

Busi: yeah well one of her many talents

We continued talking and after a while Chace walked out with his wife and Kenny left with Mpilo to get food, Arthur came in while Lee was still holding my son

Arthur: he is beautiful

Me: thank you

Arthur: he is just like his mother

Lerato looked at him and back at my son

Arthur: how does it feel hold a child?

Me: Arthur this is not the time

I knew nothing good was going to come out from this conversation

Arthur: feels good doesn't it

Lerato: how many times should I apologise?

Arthur: until it sinks that you murdered my child! Why couldn't you be like Busi and Amanda not forgetting Jay

My son started crying and Lerato handed him to me while tears streamed down her eyes

Lerato: I won't allow you to ever compare me to other women we all have our different stories and fears and I have been through shit with you

Arthur: I have apologised for making the other woman pregnant

Lerato: since you want children so badly you can do me a favour and go fuck your whore

Arthur: fine!

Lerato threw a few slaps across Arthur's face and he became angry immediately and returned the slap she fell on the ground and blood started coming out of her nose I don't think that was a slap. I placed my son on the bed and walked to them

Me: don't you ever lay your finger on her!

He looked at me and I could see the pain and hurt in his eyes. Yes she was wrong also for hitting him they are both in the wrong

Arthur: I am sorry baby

He tried to walk to her and she pulled herself back causing me to stand between them

Me: please just leave

Arthur: I just want to talk to her, it was a mistake. Chace came in and found me holding Lee in my hands

Chace: what is going on?

Me: they had a fight

Arthur: I am sorry

Lerato stood up and walked away from my room and I sat on the bed shaking both Chace and Arthur walked out, I picked my baby up and cuddled him until he slept. I kissed his forehead

Ken: I heard what happened are you okay

He came in without knocking I could see he was boiling

Me: baby calm down

Ken: no if he feels like fighting he should take it outside

Me: ken please

Ken: I don't want people fighting around my children I am not going to come down and since when does he hit women? He needs to sort himself out

I looked down there is no getting into him, he turned around and punched a hole on the wall. He was about to walk out when I pulled him to me and made him sit next to me.

The next few weeks things were awkward between Lerato and Arthur. Busi and Chace were more romantic with each other the whole Jay and Mal situation made us all love each other my baby and I were discharged and finally we were going home. We wanted to surprise the kids. The flight was long and when we landed we were tired, we drove home and walked into the house the lights were off so we walked to the bedroom, and settled the kids. We threw ourselves on the bed and it was light. Mal and Jay decided to remain behind in Spain and her health was not improving at all

I woke in the morning and found Ken feeding Tino milk I pumped out, I walked into the bathroom and refreshed myself. I got dressed and walked to the kitchen to make Breakfast for us Mpho and Naledi came running down and we shared a hug

Mpho: mom we missed you

Me: I missed you too

He picked me up this kid is some thing

Naledi: mom we should really join the gym

Mpho looked at her with disgust

Me: and that look

Mpho: no it's nothing mom she will tell you when you are ready

They both exchanged weird looks and went to change into their uniform, ken come down carrying both Mpilo and Nqobi and Chesray followed him behind Naledi rushed to Nqobi and picked him up talking pictures and kissing his cheek

Me: hey boy

I held Chesray's head and moved from me

Mpho: dad

Ken: son

Mpho: give me the car keys



Ken: be careful

Me: why was I not told?

Ken: we love you

I shook my head and my mother walked down looking at us with a smile. I thought she was home, she greeted us and ate breakfast while we updated her, we didn't tell her about the whole kidnapping and murder situation. She looked sad that she isn't there for Mal.

Mom: next week we should plan Naledi's 17th birthday

Me: you right I should talk to Ken about this

I walked into the bathroom and Ken was playing Billy Ocean – suddenly the room was dimly lit and he walked out of the bathroom wearing a towel he walked over to me and kissed me

Me: the kids

Him: your mother has them

He winked and threw me on the bed I closed my eyes in anticipation it has been a while since we touched each other. He slowly took off my clothes and got in between my thighs and we shared a kiss. He broke it and left a trail of wet kiss all the way to my thighs and separated my legs.

He sucked my toes and slowly kissed my leg all the way to my sacred passage and sniffed my opening before moving to my next leg and when he was done he moved back up to me and we kissed again we rolled until I was on top of him. I kissed his chest and moved all the down I was about to blow him when he turned me again and was on top of me. He kisses my neck and I could feel his erect member on my stomach and I held it trying to guide it inside and he jumped up.

Him: uhm I love you right

I nodded biting my lower lip

Him: but I am tired and still on punishment am I not

I looked at him. Unbelievable

Me: babe

Him: good, I need to go. I got called to the intelligence they want me back

I looked at him and he kissed my forehead jumping from the bed and got dressed leaving me panting on the bed shocked. Is this payback

Him: I will see you when I come back

I got up and ignored him getting dressed and received a phone call before he left

Me: hello

Person: hello ma'am is this Amanda Tshetlo mother of Naledi Tshetlo

Me: actually now it is Amanda Swanepoel mother of Naledi Tshetlo

Person: oh sorry it's just on the school file it is still Tshetlo, anyway I am calling from the office to inform you that your daughter is in hospital, she collapsed in the bathroom and was found bleeding

Me: oh my God which hospital?

She told me and found Ken as he was about to leave I called my mother as well and told them what the school told me

Mom: please go I will take care of these two

Ken: come let's go

We rushed to the hospital and found the doctor, she told me she was stable and they were cleaning her womb since the abortion was not done properly I felt my heart sink there is nothing more hurtful as a mother than to hear that your daughter has taken abortion pills more over that your 16year old is pregnant. I feel like I have failed her as a mother. I felt Ken wrap his arms around me

Him: can we see her?

She nodded and we followed her to her ward, I found her laying on the bed

Dr: the jumpiness you are seeing is because she is reacting to the antibiotic we have given her, she was also allergic to some of the pills she took

I kept staring at her, what have I done wrong?

Dr: I will give you guys a moment with her

She walked out and I kept staring at my daughter, the door opened and Mpho came in with the most deadly look ever scaring me a bit I have never seen my son this angry

## CHAPTER 54\*

I looked at my son and he couldn't maintain eye contact with me

Him: mom can you excuse us for a second?

I looked at Ken and he nodded he didn't even look at us as we leave and before we exited he shouted at her

Mpho: you stupid selfish little girl, I told you to talk to mom first!

I turned and looked at him he was filled with so much anger

Mpho: look at what you made me do. You are stupid and now he had to pay because of you. Naledi we made a deal that it was the two of us and we need to stick together to protect mom and now look at you are you happy lying here? I hope you are, you don't deserve what I did for you. I hate you

I kept looking at him and clearly he was on his own world because we hadn't left the ward

Ken: Mpho

He looked at us and tried to walk away when Ken held him and he broke down in his arms

Mpho: what have I done?

He cried uncontrollably and Ken kept holding on to him

Me: what did you do baby?

I was starting to get scared what could he have possibly done to get him this upset

Mpho: I am a bad person, I tried to make him pay for the pain he caused Naledi

Me: who did this baby?

Mpho: mom I am going to jail

Ken: I will never allow that to happen just tell us what happened

Mpho: I shot him

Me and ken: what?!

Mpho: I found the gun in your bedroom and took it, I wanted to scare him I thought it was empty and I pumped all bullets in him

I looked at ken

Me: we have a gun in our bedroom?!

He looked at Mpho

Ken: who did you shoot?

Me: ken

Ken: not the time, Mpho this is serious who did you shoot?

Mpho: the school principal he is the father of her child

Nurse: visiting hour is over

We were about to walk out when the machine started beeping and she was violently shaking on the bed

Me: what is happening?

The doctor rushed in and closed the door for a moment I became scared I cannot lose my daughter like this. I was fighting to stay in and Mpho was also fighting how Ken had the strength to hold the both of us is amazing. After a while Mpho broke free and cried next to us

Me: ken she is dying

Ken: no babe she will be back to us she will be here in your arms soon okay

I kept quiet for a moment and allowed all of this to sink in. I have failed my child I have failed her I have not been a good mother to her. The doors opened and the doctor told us she was stable and we can go and see her during visiting hours

Ken: we should transport her to Chace's hospital there you can get to spend time with her

I nodded

Ken: Mpho I need you to come with me we will be back okay Amy?

I just looked at them as they left and I called my mother

Her: how is she?

Me: she is stable mama

Her: I am glad she is still fine

Me: why did she do it mama?

Her: you need to ask her that

Me: I feel like a failure mama I feel I have failed my baby

I couldn't hold it in I just let it all out

Her: I am sorry baby you need to be strong for her, wait for her and let her tell you what is up okay

I nodded and remembered she wasn't near me

Me: I understand

After we hung up I sat down and waiting for my visiting hours to start

Nurse: hi I saw you sitting here I just thought I should offer you coffee

I thanked her and took it just thinking of all the good time I had with my daughter. When visiting time approached ken was still not back so I walked in the ward alone. She was looking the other way laying in a foetal position her hands on her tummy, I held her hand and lifted her up so we could share hug and we both ended up crying in each other's arms. I brushed her back while she let it all out, Mpho walked in looking like he saw a ghost and rushed to my arms

Naledi: Mpho

Mpho: don't talk to me, you made me do things to protect you Naledi voetsek don't ever Mpho me!

Naledi: I am sorry

Mpho: sorry? Sorry won't fix this! We might share blood but I am done with you forever the damage is too much, I have given you chance after chance to fix yourself you are on your own!

Me: baby don't say that

Mpho: YOU DON'T KNOW WHAT I AM FEELING INSIDE MA! TO SHOOT SOMEONE IN THE NAME OF PROTECTING YOUR SISTER WHO CANT KEEP HER LEGS CLOSED

He cried and walked out while I looked at Naledi she pushed me away from her and pulled the blankets over her face and I pulled them off

Me: why did you do it baby?

Her: mama leave me alone!

Me: don't shout at me I want answers baby

Her: just go, I know you hate me Mpho hates me, Mr Buzo hates me and hated my baby. My dad hates me. I hate you all

Me: don't ever blame me for I could have told you that we would raise the baby together had you been open to me

Her: you have never been a good mom to me, you have always loved Mpho more than me. You don't love me mama I know I was a mistake in your life

Me: you were never a mistake

Her: mama just GET OUT!

Me: don't shout at me, I have taken you nonsense far too long. I have been nothing but the best mom to you. I have always put you first and I have never made you feel anyhow. This abortion you did I was not part of it. You did it on your own, you thought you were smart, you always disrespected me you don't see me as your mother

Her: yeah well if maybe you weren't busy chasing men and taking care of us none of this would have happen. Now you have two other kids and I feel sorry for them to have you as a mother

Me: Naledi don't test me, DON'T YOU TALK TO ME LIKE THAT I AM YOUR MOTHER NOT YOUR FRIEND!

Her: pssh

I looked up trying to hold back the pain this child is giving me, she kept giving me attitude and I was about to lose it with her and slap her when Ken pulled me away from her. My hand was already in mid-air about to teach her a lesson. I have never hit them in my life and maybe that is a problem, maybe giving them too much freedom ruined them to be like this

Ken: babe calm down

Me: did you hear the way she talked to me

Ken: she is hurting you are hurting Mpho is hurting everyone is hurting

Me: no she thinks she is old enough to make decisions she thinks she is clever

Ken: please don't, she will come around

Me: I am tired ken I am tired of trying to please her, she thinks she is my friend I can't take this anymore it's too much

Ken: hon please did you take your pills?

Me: I don't need them I just need to be alone. I keep failing everyone I am the worst parent and I don't know how to stop it. What if I fail Mpilo and Tino also? They are going to hate me my kids already hate me

He wrapped his arms around and we stood like that for a while I couldn't stop the tears and the hurt in my heart I just couldn't. I heard the voices I didn't want to hear, I wished they could disappear

MamakaSimon: when were we going to be informed?

Me: who told you?

Her: Mpho called and told us about the failure of our granddaughter

Dimpho: mama we said we are coming here in peace

Her: yes but Simon wants his children to live with us

I chuckled

Me: he is in prison

Her: I am not and I can clearly see you cannot take care of my grandchildren since you married this guy I am sure you are busy opening your legs for him while your children need you

Me: where you not the one who was apologising to me not so long

Her: I was being stupid coming there to apologise to you. You will never change Amanda you always think with that thing between your thighs

Ken: enough! All of you

Her: and when ...

Him: shut up now! This is not the time for blame games our child is in there grieving the shame she has brought to our families and the best you can do is blame who did what. You are all pathetic seriously.

He turned to my mamakasimon

Him: and you where have you been all these months while I was playing father to your granddaughter? Do you know which school she attends? Do you call her and ask her how she is doing? Do you know what size jean she wears or who impregnated her do you?

She looked down in shame

Him: you come here making a racket and disrupting the peace. This is a hospital and not a shabeen

She looked at me and back at ken

Him: Amanda I think we should go home you need to rest. And you next time you insult my wife I won't be understanding I will even forget you are a woman do you hear me

She flicked a bit

Him: I said do you hear me

Her: yes

She said that with a shaky voice

Him: good, honey Mpho is waiting for us in the car

We walked to the car and I found Mpho resting we drove home in silence and when we got home I went straight to shower I didn't even feel the temperature of the water I just allowed the water to go down my skin my mind was on Naledi and how angry she was. How could she blame me for all her wrong doing? Have I been too focused on Ken and not take care of my children? Have I neglected them to the extent that they hate like this?

Ken: honey you have been in there for an hour now

I didn't have the energy to answer him back I was just sitting the in the bathroom floor with my hands around my knees and head on my knees rocking back and forth. He kicked down the door and found me sitting there. He took off his shirt and got in to where I was

Ken: honey the water is freaken cold

He turned on the hot water and I felt the change in temperature on my skin. He turned off the water after a few minutes and helped me up drying my skin and helped me in night dress

Him: babe, Tino is hungry

I nodded and he brought him to me, I tried breast feeding him and he reject it crying

Him: it is because he can feel you are upset

I ended up crying with him and ken rolled his head back and came to sit next to me

Him: stop it okay you need to be strong please. This crying is not health for anyone

He made me look at him

Him: feed him be a mother he needs you they all need you strong

I closed my eyes and opened them and fed him calmly and this time he sucked my breast greedily and I brushed his little head



## CHAPTER 55\*

I opened my eyes in the morning and I was alone in the room I wanted to get up but my body was against it, I just kept thinking about Naledi and all the rude things she said to me, how dare she blames me for her mistakes I never told her to do an abortion. I have done a lot for her and this is the thanks I get, how will people look at me in church they will be saying I am the worst mother they won't look at her and say she made wrong choices in life. The door opened and Ken walked in carrying Tino

Ken: sit up

I kept looking into space and he walked to my side

Ken: I said get up

I stood up and looked at him and he handed me Tino, I knew it was feeding time I took out my breast and begun feeding him. When I was done I helped him burp and gave him back to Ken

Him: is this how things are going to be?

I looked at him because he draining energy away

Him: is this how you handle things? Allowing things to fall apart while you sleep your problems away

The way he spoke made my son to cry and I continued looking at him if only he knew how I felt, being blamed as a failed mother, being told your priorities are not with my children but are else where it hurts

Him: I won't sit around and allow you to hover in this pitiful state pulling yourself away from society away from us your family. When you are ready to be a mother and a wife you will find me at the gym so you decide now are you going to be this defeated woman or you going to stand up and fight for your family. You are depressing everyone around you. Your children need you, who cares what Naledi said you are her mother and you know she needs you. Stop feeling sorry for yourself. Actually I am wasting my time do as you please

He stood up and I tried to reach for my son but he took him and walked out with him. how can he say that, he heard what my daughter said. I have failed my son and now I am failing my young ones. Could what he said be true am I depressing everyone? Maybe he is right I do need to fight, fight for my children for my family for normalization in our life. I need my children and they need me. I stayed in bed for a day without bathing and eating he came with my son and would allow me to feed him and take him away without talking it hurts when he ignores me like this my mother didn't even bother coming so did Mpho.

I decided get up the following day and went to take a shower, I got out get dressed and wore my gym clothes he did say I must join him, drinking my antidepressants. I made the bed and tied my hair in a ponytail before walking out to him. I opened the gym door and he was shirtless punching the punching bag. He turned his head and threw me the gloves

Me: what am I going to do with this?

Him: fight you are going to fight

He helped me wear them and dragged me to the punching bag

Him: hit it

I did and he laughed

Him: I did not say brush it I said hit it

I punched it again

Him: maybe that is why life is playing you like this because you are soft and weak hit it.

Picture all the wrong things standing in front of you and hit them

I looked at the punching bag and pictured the source of all my problems. Simon, I saw his face and started punching as hard as I could I wanted him to feel the pain I felt when he did all the horrible things to me when he called me names and made me feel insecure. I kept punching seeing all the faces I wanted dead. I kept punching until I couldn't punch anymore I was exhausted and sweating excessively panting loudly

Him: that is enough for today

I collapsed on the floor and looked up at the ceiling he joined me and we both looked up

Him: how are you feeling?

Me: tired, tired of crying, tired of caring the world on my shoulder, tired of pleasing everyone. Tired of trying to be the best mother. I noticed I can never please anyone

He looked at me

Me: but right now I feel like the world has been lifted on my shoulder and I am happy I did this

He brought his hand around me

Me: oh no babe

Him: what?

Me: you need to shave this armpit hairs

He laughed

Me: it not funny it stinks

Him: what? You don't love my natural man sweat

Me: that is not man sweat that is just sweat from your armpit hair

He stood up and helped me up

Him: I kind of like it now I don't think I will be shaving it off

Me: what no! eww!

He walked over to me

Him: maybe if you get under it you will grow it love it

He attempted to put me under his armpit and I ran away from him. He kept chasing me around and I kept dodging until he picked me up from behind and we continued to laugh, it felt good laughing for a while it really did. He nibbled my ear from behind and I turned to kiss him. We walked out and took a second shower I tried to kiss him and he pulled his head back

Me: how long are you going to resist sex with me?

Him: for as long as I tell my mind it is what it is

I kept looking at him and walked to him while he walked away. I pulled him close and kissed him

Him: stop babe this is spousal rape

Me: are you kidding me?

Him: I feel violated and dirty

Me: babe

He chuckled and walked out we got dressed and joined my family for breakfast Mpilo ran to me and hugged my feet

Her: mama

I bent down and picked her up

Me: did you miss me

She nodded and smiled while I tickled her and eventually laughed. Everyone was at the table except Mpho

Mom: are we going to see Naledi today?

I nodded

Her: good I want to have a word with her

I nodded and after eating stood up to look for Mpho. I knocked on his door and opened the door it smelled like dead fish and I looked at him and he was cuddling himself on his chair

Me: baby

I moved closer and touched him while he looked sideways I could see he was crying

Me: talk to me

Him: mama is he dead?

Me: who?

Him: you know who

Me: I don't know

Come to think of it the police never came here nor did I know whatever happened to this Mr Buzo principal

Me: you need to tell me what happened

Him: dad and uncle Chace took him I don't know if he is dead or not

He cried and I pulled him to me and he cried on my shoulder he was a mess a serious mess and Ken was right my children needed me I have been selfish nursing my own wounds, they are still young and need my guidance

Him: I am horrible ma

Me: no you are not, you my sweet boy and did what you could to protect your family

Him: two wrongs don't make a right

Me: you are just human and we are allowed to make mistakes

Him: mistakes don't include killing people

Me: it wasn't your intention to shoot him

Him: if a person walks in with a gun and says that how would you feel

Me: I would accept that he never meant to harm me

Him: honestly speaking mom

I looked down and back at him

Me: baby I think you need to speak to a professional to help you further

Him: I don't want to go there

Me: I am sorry you are going through this baby I am sorry I couldn't protect you

Him: why do women love causing pain and misery to themselves knowing something is not good enough for them but they continue allowing pain into their lives

Me: baby

Him: I don't understand you guys and I will never understand I don't even think you guys understand yourselves

I wiped his tears

Me: come eat baby

He nodded and walked with me to the kitchen and I fed him while Mpilo was craving his attention until he picked her up and played with her. After he finished eating. My mother came down and asked when we are leaving for the hospital, I called Kenny and he came from outside carrying Tino and I asked him if he could drop us at the hospital and he flat out refused and gave me the keys

Him: time to face you fears without me, oh and I transferred her to Chace's hospital and you know where that is right? Good love you babe

He kissed my mother's forehead and asked Mpho to come with Mpilo to join him outside, they walked out leaving me looking at the car keys. My hands were shaking at the thought of driving and my mother held my hand

Her: come time is running out

She walked to the car and I slowly moved my feet to the car and got in the driver's seat I kept thinking of my accident and I remember the gym and punching all my problems away. I mentally punched my fear away I can do this

I started the car and drove out, I drove on the slow lane driving slower than anyone. We got to hospital and walked in and I asked for my daughter they told where she was and the moment we walked in my mother lost it with her. I tried to stop her and I was late she already slapped her twice it was painful to watch

Me: ma!

Her: ma my arse this child is testing me, she single handily broke the entire spirit of the family

Naledi started crying

Her: wena Naledi from now on when you come out we are transferring school you are going to live with me

I closed my eyes and my daughter held on to my hand

Naledi: mama I am sorry I promise to be a good girl, I am sorry for being mean but please don't let her take me

Her: that is not going to work on us

Naledi: please ma

She was crying her lungs out while and I hugged her. The visit was not easy we spent the whole day there and returned very late at night. We drove home in silent my mother was furious when I got in I found Mpho walking towards the pool he was about to jump and I held him. And woke him, he was sleeping walking and he hasn't done that since he was a baby. I hugged him while he looked confused, I understand he hasn't had a good night sleep in a while. This is really a testing time as a woman and my family is really falling apart. I took him to bed and he slept again I waited for an hour before leaving. I found my mother in the lounge

Her: is he alright

I nodded and looked up.

Me: mama we need to pray, everything is falling apart mama I need to pray I need the Lord to intervene in our lives

She held my hands and nodded

## CHAPTER 56\*

The whole night my mother and I Prayed harder than I ever had. I ended up sleeping with her like when I did when I was child scared and afraid. I woke up in the morning and fixed myself, I walked into our bedroom and I found Tino sleeping next to his father and Mpilo on top of him marking her territory I guess. I picked up my son and he woke up I took out my breast cleaning it first with sanitizer and feed him playing before I walked in to the shower and cleaned myself.

I got out and wore my dress and heels, wearing my earrings and make-up. I kissed Ken's forehead as well as Mpilo's. I dressed Tino as well and walked out with him. I walked into

Mpho's room and he was sleeping mumbling in his dreams. I slightly shook him up and he jumped up before I wrapped my arms around him

Me: it's okay honey I am here now

He squeezed me tightly and his whole body was trembling

Me: I am here now relax

After a while he let me go and looked at me

Me: are you okay now?

He shook his head

Him: I don't know how long I can leave like this. It is torcher mom it is horrible

I held him again and rest my head on his

Me: we will get through this together, I will be with you I am your mother and you need to off load to me if not me look up to God

Him: will he forgive me?

Me: Mathews 18:21-22 baby

Him: I don't know ma I really don't know

Me: how about you get dressed and come with me to church?

He shook his head and went back to sleep while I kissed his forehead. I took my sleeping Tino and drove to church. The service was well and they were preaching about guidance and being a leader to preserver through all suffering and lifting up our burdens to the lord. I left before the ending and drove home to talk to my mother preparing for Naledi coming home. I found them waiting for me

I called Kenny and Ma to the side

Me: baby, ma I have decided

They looked at me all concerned while I breast fed Tino

Me: mom I will let Naledi stay with me

My mother shook her head

Me: I know ma but it is not a matter of being weak and allowing my child too much control. If I keep dumping my problems on you how will that help me grow as a mother how will it benefit anyone? It won't it is just shifting one problem to another. I want to be her mother, I will do my level best as humanly possible to discipline her and be there for

her. If you were not here who would I burden with my problems? I need to be a mother and I will be a mother

She looked at me and nodded her head smiling while Ken held my hand

Me: thank you for understanding

We drove to the hospital to fetch my daughter and Dr Voster asked me to come to her office leaving Ken to sign her discharge papers

Me: good afternoon

Vorster: afternoon I have done some tests on your daughter and unfortunately I have bad news

Me: what?

Her: she overdosed on the abortion pills and they did an incomplete job she contracted an infection and hence she reacted like it was an allergic reaction but we managed to heal her, for now she needs to stay away from men to allow her body to rest

I closed my eyes and allowed this information to sink in. I thanked her and walked to look for my family when I felt hands I turned and it was Chace we exchanged a hug and I looked at him and he brushed my face kissing my forehead

Chace: how are you holding up?

Me: I am good my family is coming along

He nodded and walked to find Kenny

Chace: Mal is coming back next week

Me: how is Jay?

He looked up and I held his hand looking at him

Me: it will be alright

Chace: thank you

We shared a brief hug which lasted longer than 6seconds and I pulled back from him to look for Ken. I found him holding her bags and I kissed his cheek

Me: should we go?

He nodded and I pushed Naledi to the car we drove in silence listening to Chace's I mean Kenny's song and got to the house as soon as we walked in she rushed to the lounge and sat on the couches. It is time I become a mother that she needs. Mpho walked out of his room locked eyes with Naledi and walked back in his room



Me: do you see what you have done?

Naledi: ma not now

Me: if not now when?

She looked at me and puffed

Me: let's get one thing clear I am your mother not your friend, and no I won't send you to my mother's house you are going to stay here

Her: so?

Me: that means from now on you are going to listen to my rules. From now on since you want to be a grown woman you are going to be a grown-up which means no allowance from me or Kenny

Her: what?

She sat up and looked at me

Me: when I cook you will cook for yourself don't expect anything from us anymore until you are ready to be a child and learn to respect us as your parents

Her: mama please

Me: and from now on you will be the woman you want to be I am done Naledi I have tried everything and you keep failing me. I don't know what you want from me anymore so when you are ready to talk to me we won't do much talking

I saw tears coming down her eyes

Me: I can't do this

Kenny: don't you think you are a bit hush

Me: no she is old enough to make her own decisions and she doesn't respect me. I am tired of being undermined by a child more over again and to top it off my child, I gave birth to her and raised her I have given her love more love than anyone I just can't anymore Kenny if she wants to be woman enough she will be, we cant be two grown women in one house

I stood up and Mpilo came from outside and ran to my hands I kissed her and when she saw Ken she got off immediately and sat on his lap my mother came in as well and she hugged me.

Her: baby I think I have to go back home

Me: I was about to ask when you leaving because we left dad on his own

She chuckled

Her: he is a strong man but lately he has changed

Me: how? What happened exactly?

Her: I don't know he is aggressive and mostly doesn't respect me anymore

Me: I think I should talk to him

Her think so too

I took Tino and walked to the bedroom with him feeding him and playing with him both until we both took a nap. In the middle of the sleep I felt someone tuck in between me and it was Mpho I kissed his forehead and continued my nap with him.

\*KENNY\*

These past few days my wife has been so stressed out she has forgotten to take good care of herself she has been so focused on things that got her down and forgot where her happiness is. After she spoke to Naledi I watched her breakdown and I pulled Naledi in for a hug she is my daughter after all

Naledi: she hates me

Me: no sweetheart she loves you, she is just heartbroken because of the way you spoke to her the way you hurt her and the way you made her feel like she is not your mother

Her: I am alone now

Me: you have me

She continued crying in my arms and I let her be while Mpilo kept looking at her and wiping her face

Me: you just need to apologise to her and make her realise she means everything to you

Her: how?

Me: we will work it out soon. Mother!

I called out to her and she came to us

Me: where is Amanda?

Mother: she is sleeping with Tino

I nodded

Me: can you please do me a favour today

Mother: what?

Me: I am going to take her out tonight with Tino I want you please to take care of my children

She nodded and I walked out to find Ray sitting by the pool

Me: are you okay boy?

Him: yes dad, I just miss mom is she ever coming back?

I shook my head and he rested his head on my chest

Me: we will be alright son. Tonight I want to do something special for Amanda mom and will you be a good boy and stay with her mother?

He nodded and we walked back into the house and I made a few calls I wanted to make this night special for the love of my life I needed to see the smile on her face. I walked to the bedroom and found her sleeping with our sons I walked to the bedroom and filled bath water for her. I slowly shook her up and she lifted her head up in slow motion, the air bags were showing and I helped her up

Me: how are you feeling?

Her: good

I helped her to the bathroom and slowly took off her clothes while she smiled at me, my baby. I lifted her up and helped her in the bathtub a call come through telling me her dress is her. I rushed down to pick it up and paid the lady walking back in

Me: I have a surprise for you

She saw the dress and was speechless. She looked beautiful. I gave Tino a bath and dressed him up as well. We walked out telling the family we will be back soon. I drove us to the hotel and we had dinner there she couldn't stop blush at the attention she got from people after we were down we walked to the room I booked for the night. We settled my son first and sat on the bed talking, I turned to face her and she looked at me amazed

Me: you know my love you have been stressed and I thought I should do this to show you how much you mean to me.

I said all of this taking off her clothes and mine as well I slowly made my way to her and started kissing her all over I could feel her react to my touch, the soft moans she made I slowly brushed her thighs making my way to vagina slowly inserting my fingers in. I wanted to make this night last longer and take her to her paradise. I love her so much and I never want her to worry too much by the time I inserted my fully erected member she was fully satisfied by my foreplay

CHAPTER 57\*

\*AMANDA\*

The way he touched me the whole night the way he made love to me, it was like he was communicating to my soul telling me I deserve to be happy I should be happy. It is a pity my son woke up three times at night and I had to stop and breast feed him. Ken found it funny I did not.

Kenny: get up beautiful

Me: let me sleep

I turned my body from him and faced the other way unfortunately the sun hit my eyes disturbing my beautiful sleep

Him: come on love we need to make the best of this day

Me: okay I am up

I lifted my head and looked at him smiling he handed my little baby he was hungry again and gaining weight so much he was chubby and beautiful, seeing him reflex his smile filled my heart and I fed him and ken sat next to me watching him eat

Me: it is rude to stare at someone while they eat

Him: I can watch the two of you eat the whole day

I couldn't help but blush and he continued looking at his son after I was done I gave him to ken and he burped him while I walked to the bathroom to take a shower and there was flower trail I got in and the bathtub was already full with water and a dish of strawberries with chocolate coating as well as a song by Lasauce I do ft. Amanda Black playing in the background I got in the bath and a note written if you want me to join just shout my name and I will be there in a hurry. I closed my eyes eating my strawberries and smiled

Me: let him sweat out a little I will enjoy my strawberries very much and I need to detox I need time alone before I become mad again

I rested my head back and closed my eyes the door opened and he got in leaving the door opened

Me: I didn't shout

Him: not you but your cruel heart did

I smiled and made room for him and he sat behind me

Me: where is my son?

Him: sleeping

I tried to turn to face and he forced me to sit the way I was sitting and he fed me the strawberries, the continued touching me and turning me on. He gently lifted me up and we made love in the bath

Him: finish up we still have a long day ahead

We finished bathing and walked out I found the place set for spa massage

Him: take off this

He slowly took off my bathrobe and helped me on the bed they started doing they magic on my body, I felt so relaxed the oils filled the room and they were so relaxing. Ken sat waking his baby and playing with his child making conversation with the people he refused to lay on the bed and have them massage him it was funny to watch. After they were done they tidied up and he helped me up and we got dressed. We slowed danced to whenever you call reminding me of our wedding after we were done we walked down and ate and I breastfed my child while people gave us weird looks for breasting like I killed someone

Manager: hi ma'am that couple over there is complaining about you breastfeeding in public

Pointing at a white couple who probably don't have children, Kenny slightly turned his face up to look at the poor guy. If looks could kill he would have been dead

Kenny: do you know who I am?

Manager: no sir and frankly I don't care we have to respect all our clients and they are regulars here

Me: okay I will stop feeding my child and let him die of hunger

Kenny: you will do no such thing because I am the owner of this place

The manager looked at him

Manager: wait Ms Nancy

Kenny: she listens to me I know it because she is in charge of most of my companies

He stood up

Kenny: attention everyone I am the owner of this hotel and I have to ask one thing is it wrong to feed your child. While you eat do we tell you no don't eat like this because you fat on because you thin or because you chow loudly?

Me: Kenneth please

He really was mad I didn't even know how to calm him down

Kenny: my wife is feeding her child and is told by the manager that it is wrong. Should babies starve because find it disgusting?

He walked to the couple

Him: the day you have a kid you will know how it feels to starve your kids to please society. No ma'am it is not wrong to breastfeed your child what is wrong is complaining about it like it is a crime I will not allow my child to starve just to please your white supremacy

I kept looking at him and his skin colour was not helping the course I just busted out laughing and some of the people laughed with me. He came back to me and we sat down laughing still

Me: ken you are crazy

Kenny: for you I am crazy

He called the manager

Kenny: tomorrow please don't report for duty okay

Manager: I am sorry sir

Kenny: it's not only for my wife but also for many women who have been victimized and scrutinized, who are voiceless and powerless. I will not allow you to oppress them like that and what you did was victimize my wife

I heard other people clapping their hands at what he said

Me: Kenny please

Kenny: no baby no I will not allow discrimination and prejudice to happen in my businesses it reflects bad on me

We ate over a light conversation except for the last part all in all my day was beautiful. We ended up playing with our food people looking at us like we crazy he brought the youthful side out of me

Me: if you continue like this we might just make Valentino a little sister

He chuckled

Him: hmm don't give me ideas

He pointed at his pants and I quickly handed Tino to him so people don't see what is happening down there

Me: I wouldn't beside I am too old and I want to share my intelligence with other people

Him: meaning?

Me: I want to go back to work if not for a company than I can be a lecturer

Him: will you be able to handle it?

Me: yes beside I am bored staying at home not doing anything

He held my hand and kissed it

Him: after he is three months we talk again and maybe I might be the one to forward your CV's

I smiled when he said that

Him: come let's go back home to our beautiful kids

We drove all the way home and I felt relaxed and rejuvenated and young and fresh. I got in and found my children cleaning the house everything was moved Naledi was mopping I turned to look at ken and he raised his hands up. My mother come to us drinking tea

Her: hello

I smiled

Me: mom

Her: you look young and fresh

Kenny: I need to go and lay my son down excuse me

My mother and I walked outside where I found Mpilo playing with the dogs which were equally happy to see me and seriously this dogs were big. When Ken walked out they went crazy and started playing rough with him

Mom: so what did you get up to?

Me: well if you should know you have a wonderful son in law who knows how to take care of me

My mother couldn't stop grinning we chatted for a while

Me: did you tell Naledi to clean the house?

She shook her head

Her: I woke up to breakfast in bed fresh eggs and toasted bread I thought the world was coming to an end or I have really died but here I am kicking and breathing

I laughed

Her: don't laugh I really thought I was being poisoned for a moment

She came with a tray of tea for me and scotch for Ken he quickly threw a glance at me and I was equally shocked

Her: enjoy mama

I looked at her without showing any emotion she has to do more than this to fix us. She has hurt me beyond, and pushed me to the limit

Her: mama

Me: thank you for the tea so ma as we were saying

She turned and walked back to the house

Mom: don't you thing that was harsh

Me: ma when you found out I was pregnant with Mpho what did you do? Simon and I had to work fast to earn your forgiveness which meant marrying him ma making me tea and cleaning the house is not enough she broke my trust and hurt my son, Mpho is a zombie because of her

Mom: what are you planning to do with Mpho?

Me: I have to have him admitted I can sense he is close to suicide than ever and I don't want to lose him over small things

Kenny: Amy I have to go I will be back soon

I nodded and he walked out and Mpilo ran after him crying I stood up and tried to pick her up but she wasn't having it, I took her to the pool and we both dipped our feet in it she ended up splashing me with the water and I allowed her to have her fun I will get her. A phone came through and I picked it up

Busi: hi

Me: hello dear

Her: can we meet please?

She sounded upset on the call and it broke my heart

Me: sure

The way she sounded it scared me and I video called Mal immediately

Mal: my beautiful little sis

Me: Daluxolo

My mom moved closer to me and exchanged greetings with him



Me: is everything alright?

Him: yes everything is fine my wife is picking up a bit of weight there and there

He moved the camera to her and she really was worse than she was the last time I saw her the pipes attached to her where not making things easy. I like the positivity he had but it was starting to become worrisome. I felt my heart shatter and tears stung my eyes

#### CHAPTER 58\*

I couldn't continue the conversation with my brother it was heart breaking watching him break apart while he wanted to remain positive I really couldn't take it. My mother took over the phone and had a conversation with him. I looked up and said a silent prayer to God so he could protect him and be with him in his time of need not forgetting his children I wonder who is taking care of his children I should go and visit them. They cannot be alone in this tough time in their life. My mother came to me after the call and sat next to me

Her: baby don't worry he will be fine God is with him

We shared a hug

Her: baby

She wiped my tears

Her: where is Mpilo?

I looked around and I couldn't see her

Me: I left her with you when the call came through

We heard the dogs barking and I rushed to the pool but she wasn't here at all

Me: ma where is she?

We looked for her and Mpho came out carrying her in his arms

Him: ma you are careless she could have drowned, she was alone in the pool and the dog jumped in to save her.

I closed my eyes

Him: here take her

He handed me my child and turned to walk away

Me: Mpho

Him: what!

He shouted at me and I realised how angry he was

Him: how could you be so inconsiderate? She needed you and you failed her I am so disappointed ma. Everyone in this family keeps disappointing me over and over again I cannot get peace in this house without having a crisis after another. One tragedy over another. Pain after pain

His words hit home

Me: it won't happen again

Him: damn right it won't

He walked back into the house while my daughter was screaming her lungs out Naledi came and handed me Tino who was also crying and my mother helped me with Mpilo and I fed Tino. Kenny came back and looked at Mpilo examining her. he was tomato red on the face ready to kill anyone on his way

Me: ken

Him: not now

He raise his hand on my face

Him: where is Mpho I need to take him somewhere?

Me: in his room, but baby

Him: DAMMIT AMANDA I WILL DEAL WITH YOU WHEN I COME BACK OKAY!

I nodded and looked down while he took Mpilo from my mother and went into the house to look for Mpilo

Me: I messed up ma

She brushed my back, he came back and took Tino from me

Me: where are you going?

Him: somewhere I know my children will be safe

With that he walked away, I scratched my head and the door opened Busi came in I even forgot we agreed to meet I just need to make peace with Kenny. We shared a hug she looked much stressed out

Me: what is wrong?

She just cried on my shoulder and I brushed her back

Me: please tell me what is wrong?

Her: I don't know what is wrong I really don't. I wanted to talk to Nkosi but he has been busy lately and I have nobody after my mother died and with Tshego disabled

Me: I am here hush now just tell me what is eating you up

Her: it's Chace

Me: what about him

Her: I don't know these past few weeks he has been distant and drawing more and more into his work, he ignores me and is not talking about his twin. I know the problem is because of the fact that she is dying and he is powerless to stop it. It hurts watching him behave like that

I really didn't know what to say or do because I have a problem of my own trying to apologise to Kenny

Her: I am sorry for offloading on to you I know you have issues of your own, he told me your daughter was admitted

I looked at her and nodded

Me: yeah but she is fine now

Her: I should go thank you for listening

Me: stay

She looked happy when I offered her to stay

Her: I don't know if I am forward or what for asking you this

Me: what?

Her: can you please talk to him if not you can you convince Kenny to talk to him. Not even Arthur can get through to him and Mal is going through his fair share of drama

Me: well I am not promising anything

Her: please I need your help

I gave her a glass of wine and we sat chatting and I cooked, I couldn't drink because I am still breastfeeding. Time what by fast and around seven Ken came back with the kids and looked at me

Me: hi honey

Him: Busi

He kissed her cheeks and he looked at me ignoring my greeting

Him: is everything okay?

She nodded and he looked at the table seeing a bottle of wine and two glasses

Him: you have an infant and busy drinking wine

Me: it's not for me

He shook his head

Him: first you neglect my daughter and now this

He walked away from us carrying Mpilo who was fast asleep and Tino who was wide awake and Busi stood up apologising we bid each other farewell and my mother excused herself while I walked to the bedroom he was on the bed with his son I joined them

Me: Kenny it was a mistake and I won't repeat it

He jumped up and I moved back in self-defence. I know he won't hurt me but when someone is angry you don't guarantee how they will react

Him: mistake? A bloody mistake?

I could feel the frustration in his voice

Me: I didn't mean to leave her unattended

I felt tears sting my eyes

Him: if I hadn't checked the cameras and called Mpho where will she be right now huh? We could be waiting at the hospital for her to recover waiting not knowing what to do. What if she died did you think about that did it even cross you flipping mind?

Cameras?

Me: I got distracted and left her with my mother

Mpilo woke up crying I tried to touch her and he snatched her from me picking up Valentino who started crying it broke my heart when he shut me out

Him: I got this it is fine!

Me: ken please let me feed him

Him: AMANDA NZIMANDE JUST LEAVE MY BEDROOM AND LET US BE

I thought we were married

Me: I am not going anywhere

Him: fine we will leave

He walked out and left me in the bedroom. I sat on the bed just letting all my emotions out and thinking of the way he left in a fit of anger. The door opened and my mother got in

Her: baby

She wrapped her arms around me

Her: I am sorry

Me: no it is my fault I shouldn't have left her

She brushed my back and allowed me to be. After I calmed down she gave me my anti-depressants and we walked to the kitchen. She dished up for us, ken took his plate and walked to the bedroom. Naledi tried to cook her own meal

Me: baby what are you doing?

Her: I have to mom

I shook my head

Me: come eat baby you must be tired from cleaning the whole house

She joined us and we said grace before we started eating, I just wish he could forgive me

## CHAPTER 59\*

After super I kissed my children goodnight and went to the bedroom. I was hesitant to enter seeing how angry and pissed off Kenny was. I gently place Tino in his cot and kissed Mpilo good night who was sleeping on our bed. He turned to look at me and turned back. I walked to the drawer and took out extra blankets

Him: where are you going?

Me: to sleep on the couch

Him: okay do as you please

He closed his eyes and it hurts me that he won't fight for us

Me: Kenneth it was a mistake I am sorry

Him: you left my child playing alone and she could have died Amanda

Me: it was a mistake what more do you want from me I have apologised already

He kept quiet and looked at me

Him: just go

Me: Kenneth you have issues what is wrong with you

Him: what is wrong with me is you giving up every time you fuck up. Look at how you handled our kids

Me: how should I have handled my kids? Tell me. Should I have allowed Naledi to talk to me the way she did, allow her to be pregnant again and have more kids because I couldn't punish her? Should I have allowed Mpho to sink further in depression? Should I have allowed Mpilo to remain kidnapped? How should I have handled everything? I have tried ken I have

Him: how are you trying?

Me: I am not superwoman ken I cannot keep saving everything. Very one keeps expecting a lot from me demanding my attention. I am human I have given my best to this family Kenneth I never judged you when I was point by a gun Ken I nearly lost my life at gun point but I forgave you, we could have lost Tino as well. I am done if you and the kids think I am doing a horrible job being a parent well to hell with all of you to hell with me trying to be the best. I am human I don't have super powers to please everyone I have tried and I am done trying I am sick and tired of being judged and looked down upon. I am sick and tired of people telling me how to behave, frankly I don't give a damn anymore

I took a suitcase and packed my clothes in it

Him: where are you going?

Me: somewhere I know I will be safe

He looked down and tried to stop me but I was quick and walked out I cannot be blamed for all the bad that happens in this family. I have made one careless mistake which I thought I had control of but here I am. I got in the car and drove to the nearest hotel. I booked a room for a week and walked in ordering food. My phone rang and it was Kenny

I switched it off and cried myself to sleep. This is the worst moment of my life. I am really unappreciated in my family everything bad I take blame for and they can't even forgive me for one mistake that I know I won't repeat ever again

The sun hit my eyes and it was early in the morning and I woke with a heavy headache I washed myself and wore my clothes walking down to eat. My mind was miles away until I felt someone touch my shoulder I turned and it was Chace looking at me he also looked down

Me: hi

I tried to be my usual jolly self but I couldn't I was really down

Him: hi

He sat next to me and order a glass of whiskey

Me: what are you doing here?

Him: I should ask you the same thing. Anyway I needed fresh air and to be away from reality

Me: same here.

I got my coffee and I drank it while he drank his whiskey

Him: so do you want to share or?

Me: I made a mistake of leaving Mpilo alone by the pool and she nearly died but now Kenny won't stop blaming me nor forgive me

He looked at me

Me: and to think I have forgiven him on all his mistakes and secrets he kept from me. I am tired of everyone having expectation from me it hurts Chace it hurts so much and the worst part is I miss them. And I am sure they don't miss me at all

He held my hand

Me: I am sorry for burdening you with this

Him: relax you are Mal's sister making you my family

He looked down

Him: I hate how I don't have control over life

Me: why?

Him: I am used to being in control and now my life is falling apart because of the fear of losing my twin all my life it has been us together. I made her my priority in life I love her and I don't want to lose her I cannot lose her. We have been through a lot together

He cried on my shoulder and I tried to support him

Him: life is so unfair all the good people get taken away what if I lose my wife and kids I will be alone in this world with nobody by my side

Me: nonsense I am here with you

He pulled his head up and continued drinking in the morning

Me: I think you need to talk with your wife about this and make her aware of what you are feeling she needs to know

Him: I don't want to stress her I feel more at ease talking with someone far away from the situation

I nodded

Him: not that you are far away of course you are family and I don't know I find it easy to talk to you especially after you could talk to me about your ex husband's situation

I nodded and held his hand

Me: I don't think it is healthy to drink this in the morning

Him: it helps numb my feelings

I shook my head in disapproval

Me: excuse me I need to go back to my room

I stood up and left, the moment I got in I remembered it is my daughter's birthday, I took out my phone and video called her

Naledi: hi mom

Me: baby how are you?

She faked smiled

Her: good

Me: happy birthday to you. Happy birthday to you happy birthday dear Naledi happy birthday to you hip hip

Her: horay!

Me: hip hip



Her: mom stop

She was smiling like crazy

Her: thank you mom

Me: did you get cake?

Her: no

Me: oh my baby I will buy you cake when I come back love you okay

Her: please come back soon love you two

We hung up and another day past with me stuck in that hotel stress free and getting to know Chace he really wasn't a bad person and he has been through a lot with his sister. I decided to switch off my phone and just be. they need to know and appreciate what I contribute to this family I am sick and tired of being walk on. A knock came in on the door and I stood up and opened to have Chace standing there

Me: get in

He got in and sat on the couch

Me: how can I help you tonight?

He chuckled stood up and pour drinks for us

Him: do we need to be this formal?

Me: I don't know how to react

He chuckled and switched on the TV

Him: you can relax we are family remember

I sat back and we watched sport just talking general stuff, the night went by fast and the conversation and drinks as well as food was great. I really enjoyed his company

Him: man thank you for everything you have done for me. I feel like my old self again

Me: I think we need to go back to our families now

Him: my wife must be worried sick and calling like crazy

He stood up to leave

Him: good night Amanda

Me: good night Chace

We got to the door and he moved closer to me shared a hug and kissed my forehead. I looked up at him and he brought his face closer to mine and I broke the hug.

Him: sorry

Me: it's fine it's okay

I nodded and he walked away while I kept staring at him. I hope we don't do this again it is going to break our families and friendships apart we should just become friends nothing less and nothing more. I closed the door and threw myself on the couch until I heard a knock on the door

Me: what now

I opened the door and was attacked by an unexpected kiss I closed my eyes allowing the feelings in and pushed him away

Me: what are you doing?

Him: I miss you

Me: Kenneth Swanepoel please leave me alone. I am Amanda Ndzimande remember? You don't love me. You guys don't appreciate me and don't value me, you hate me for one mistake I am the worst mother to our children so I might as well be here and not there. You don't need me you are doing just fine without me...

I tried to talk and he silenced me with a kiss, picking me up and gently threw me on the bed. He got on top of me and I threw a slap on his face

Me: you can't just come here and expect sex from me I am not that cheap

He looked at me shocked and I threw another slap

Me: this is for making me feel bad about myself and separating from you and my family

He continued looking at me with an angry expression

Me: what are you going to fight me? Do you want to hit me back do you?

He closed his eyes and didn't say much but attacked me with a kiss

Him: you touch me we increase the rounds I don't care

I wanted to say something and felt his lips on my neck while he slowly undressed me

## CHAPTER 60\*

I woke tired and sore in the morning his hand was covering me and he was facing the other, my mind was on how aggressive he was last night the way we made love was different. I kept looking at his tattoo and I traced my finger around his arm, he turned and faced me still sleeping I kept looking at his perfect face fighting the urge to touch him. I moved closed to him he shifted his body to accommodate me and his free hand brushed my hair from my face

Him: you know it's rude to stare

I smiled at what he said

Him: good morning

I decided to give him the silent treatment until he apologises he can't just come here and expect me to forgive him over sex. I can't keep accommodating his mood swings like he is a God or something

Him: is the King angry?

I looked at him

Me: king?

Him: one way to get you to talk

He kissed the back of my neck

Him: look I am sorry I overacted but I couldn't stop thinking if I didn't see that and alert Mpho what was going to happen

Me: I know but it didn't happen did it

He shook his head

Him: because I saved the day like always

I rolled my eyes back and he chuckled

Him: get up we need to fix ourselves your mom wants to go home

I stood up

Me: plus I miss feeding Tino

Him: well after you left we ran short on breast milk so now he is on the formula its better that way since you want to go back to work and in case you feel like parenting is too hard for you and you need to escape

Me: ww...hat?

Him: you heard me. Since you have been gone for two days I have booked Mpho in for evaluation and transferred Naledi to a new school talked to an old friend of mine its where Chace's children are and where Chesray is

I looked at him questioning

Him: relax, those are the only changes in the house

Him: oh and Mpho is doing well since I showed him that Mr Busomething guy was alive and Chace managed to save him

That name brought back the images of yesterday

Me: at least he is survived

Him: well fate had other plans for him

Me: what did you do?

Him: see no evil hear no evil

We took a shower and got dressed I knew I didn't want the answer to what he just said and I am not going to get the answers anyway. He ordered room service and had our breakfast

Me: I am sorry I just up and left

He smiled and continued eating. He paid the fees holding my bags and we drove home

Me: what about my car

Him: I will get someone to get it

I looked at the road ahead and remembered the promise I made to Naledi I cannot let my child down over and over again, I need to be a mother to her and I need to be a mother to all my children they need a mother not a person who gives up

Me: can we go to the mall?

Him: why?

Me: you will see

We parked in the mall and I brought cake for my daughter

Me: I missed her birthday might as well make it up to her

He smiled and continued to drive us home when we got in he parked the car in the garage and he looked at me before I got out we looked at each other deep into the eyes and he pulled me in for a kiss

Him: don't you ever leave me again okay

Me: how did you find me?

Him: your car

Me: how?

He smiled and winked

Him: I thought I was going crazy without you

He pushed the seat back and picked me up positioning me on top of him and he kissed my neck down to my breasts while I rolled my head back

Him: have you ever had car sex before?

I looked at him and thought of Lucky flashed in my mind, how he touched me and made me feel. I can't believe I hurt someone who loved me whole heartily and as much as I deny it I loved him as well. I opened my eyes quickly and looked at Ken

Me: yes

I opened the door and got out and he followed me how do you tell someone yes I had car sex but it was with your brother and it was to spite my husband

Him: did I hit a nerve?

I shook my head and helped me offload my bags and I carried the cake we didn't talk until we went inside the house he dropped my bags and I placed the cake in the fridge I heard the voice I missed so much

Mpilo: mama

She came running with her chubby body and I picked her up. she placed both her hands on my face turning it over and over again I couldn't help but smile as she did this

Mpilo: mba mama

I kissed her lips and hugged her

Mpilo: mama

Me: Mpilo

Her: mit you

I you she wanted to say missed you

Me: I missed you too my love

Her: mama sweets for Mpilo

Me: I don't have them sweet baby

She kissed me again and when she saw Ken she got down and moved to him, he picked her up and she rested her head on his shoulder and Ken kissed her forehead

Him: missed me baby?

She nodded

Him: how much do you love daddy

She lifted her body

Her: this much

She raised her hands to both her sides

Him: and mommy?

She did the same. I kissed her forehead and walked in the lounge to find my son sleeping peacefully in his cot, I gently picked him up and kissed his forehead when I heard my mother's voice

I walked to where she was and she had tears in her eyes

Her: are you sure?

.....

Her: okay thank you Lumka I will be there soon I promise

.....

Her: no we are still together for better or for worse he is my husband don't you dare do anything without me

The conversation continued for a while and she hung up looking at me and I wrapped my arms around her while she cried. I have never in my entire life seen my mother cry and to see her like this broke my heart usually I am the one who breaks down and now here she is crying her heart out a site I never want to see. I wonder if this is how my kids feel whenever they see me breakdown every day because I cannot hide my emotions

Her: leave me my child I am fine

Me: ma what is going on?

She tried to walk away but I stopped her

Me: ma start talking

Her: your father was missing for the past two days and he was found 15km away from home. I need to go to him Amanda you father is losing his mind and I am nursing you a mother of five Kids

I looked at her and I understand where she is coming from

Me: okay I will drop you home

Her: no I will go on my own

She walked out and I found Kenny standing at the corner with his arms folded on his chest looking at us. He walked to me

Him: she is stressed out don't take it personally

As we were talking she walked out carrying her bags

Me: are you leaving now?

Her: my husband needs me

Me: ma you can leave tomorrow not now

Her: Amanda you don't get to tell what to do now if you can excuse me please

Me: ma

Her: AMANDA!

Ken held me back

Him: Mrs Ndzimande I can organise a flight for you

Her: please don't call me that I am your mother

Him: well I can get my friend to get there fast with a private plane, allow me to make the arrangement and get you a car

She nodded and sat on the couch while ken called people I kept looking at her and she really was breaking apart I didn't like seeing her like that and I felt powerless

Him: the driver is here

He helped carry her bags and walked to the car, I didn't see the time and Naledi walked in with Ray and they both had worried look on their face she saw me and walked to me we shared a brief hug I did the same to Chesray and he really looked distant I wish I could get to him to open up to me

Her: mama where is she going?

Me: she needs to go home you grandfather needs her

She nodded and walked to the bedroom, ken came back and kissed my forehead. We made a sandwich for Cheray and I gave it to him. He ate while ken and I had a conversation

Him: be strong for her

Me: I will

I walked to the fridge and took out the cake and placed it on the table when Naledi came down she found it and looked at me smiling

Her: you remembered?

Me: how could I not my baby is getting old

She ran into my arms and hugged me

Ken: am I not getting anything?

He took out a present for her and it was a beautiful diamond necklace and it looked real

Me: are those real?

Ken: could be

Naledi jumped up and snatched the box from ken trying them on squealing like any idiot

Her: thank you dad

She jumped into his arms and he kissed her forehead

Him: I never forgot your birthday I just wanted to upstage your mother

She smiled and walked away

Me: Kenneth

Him: from tomorrow until Friday we are visiting Mpho and on the weekend he will be back home we are going to see your parents I have a feeling your mother will need us more than ever

Me: okay but can we talk about the diamonds

I really had a bad feeling about this and he just brushed it off when our son woke up he hungrily feasted in his bottle I won't lie not breastfeeding can be painful on the breast and now my son is on formula because I selfishly left him alone without food. I decided to make food for the night



## CHAPTER 61\*

I dished up for us and we sat as the family

Ray: daddy

Ken looked at him and he looked down

Ken: yes my boy boy

Ray: when am I going to get my gift?

He looked really sad and I wanted to reach out to him but I knew he would constantly reject me like he normally does and it breaks my heart to see a seven year old this miserable and there was nothing I could do but try to break this ice cold wall he has built around him

Ken: hmm does my big boy want his present now what will he get when he turns seven?

He looked up and looked at him

Ray: another one

He said with a bright smile on his face

Ken: really hmm daddy is generous isn't he

He stood up and walked to his son

Ken: tell you what come with me

He held his hand and they walked out to the garage soon I heard the car and Naledi looked at me

Her: where are they going?

I shrugged my shoulder and she took the dishes to the sink and she did the dishes I have never since she was born seen her do dishes on her own before I tell her to do

Me: how was your new school?

Her: it's alright mom nothing special just Charlotte, Chloe and I are friends I thought they would be home schooled seeing their dad is super rich

I closed my mouth knowing how much Ken has money but I don't want to over spoil them just in case they think his money is their money they need to work hard as well

Her: well I am off to sleep I will see Mpho tomorrow

Me: I nearly forgot

I took my car keys

Her: don't rush off wait for dad I mean who will take care of your little son if anything happens to you?

She picked up Mpilo

Her: this one I can handle she is a big girl now

She walked to the bedroom with her

Her: goodnight mom

Me: goodnight but it is still early

Her: yeah I have school tomorrow remember

I took out my phone and called my mother she didn't pick up I tried five times and nothing I sat on the couch and closed my eyes until Tino decided to have a little tantrum I picked him up and he just wasn't keeping quiet I walked up and down with him nothing, I gave him his bottle but he rejected it and continued crying

Me: come on baby please keep quiet for mommy please. Work with me here

I said this as was I trying to calm him down I kept walking up and down, I just couldn't understand the sudden change in him because he usually eats and sleeps. I laid him on the couch and tried to change his nappy but it wasn't full and he continued crying turning pink on the face. I brushed his little back but nothing

Me: what do you want baby please

The more I tried to talk to him the more he cried I ended up leaving him on the couch. I have to admit I never really had one on one time with him alone usually ken is here or my mother was here and they told he cries a lot but I never really paid attention to it until now. It was frustrating watching him cry like this not knowing how to help him. I tried everything I used to try on Mpho and Naledi nothing.

I took his little feet and gently applied pressure on his feet and it seemed to work a little as he greedily sucking on his blanket. Dammit I have a colic baby, I turned him around and brushed his little tummy and gently brought him to me. the door opened and Chesray walked in jumping up and down eating ice-cream I gave Ken the death stare it is late for him to have ice-cream at this age

Me: did you have fun baby?

He looked at me and nodded finishing his ice-cream

Me: where did you go?

Ken: it is our secret

Me: oh okay

Ray walked to the bedroom

Ken: I am going to read him a bedtime story

Maybe I can try to bond with him through this

Me: can I do it

Ken looked at me

Him: are you sure?

I nodded and he took a much calmer Tino from me. I slowly walked to his bedroom and knocked on his door I walked in and found him facing the other side

Me: can I read you a story?

He turned to look at me and shook his head

Him: you are not mommy!

I closed my eyes and nodded I am not giving up now

Me: I know I just want to read you a story

Him: can daddy do it?

I shook his head

Me: I asked daddy to be the one to read you the story

Him: no!

Me: please

He kept quiet and I took the book and read it to him, he gently closed his eyes and I lifted the blanket to cover him up properly kissing his forehead, I wish he realises how much I want to be in his life maybe one day or someday. I switched off the light and walked to our bedroom

Him: how did it go?

Me: fine I guess

He smiled and we got in bed after he placed Tino in his cot

Me: we forgot to visit Mpho

Him: tomorrow is still a day you need to rest now

Me: he misses his mother

Him: who?

Me: ray

Him: oh well you are his mother now

Me: yeah but does he know that?

Him: honey you are the adult here make him trust you like how I made your kids trust me

He slowly closed his eyes. How am I going to gain the trust of a small child? A baby who hates me and misses his mother every day. My thought were disturbed when his phone rang I got up and answered, the person was speaking Mandarin Chinese and I shook Kenny up

Him: what

Me: you have a phone call and the person is speaking in Chinese

He jumped up and took the phone from me

Him: Mr Wong please calm down explain what is happening

.....

Him: she is what? When? How?

.....

Him: I don't know what she told you but I know nothing about that

....

Him: okay okay I will sort it out, no please leave her out of this. She knows nothing and I will sort it out

He turned to look at me and he immediately looked down

Me: what is happening?

Him: I have to go

He jumped up and got dressed

Me: Kenneth

He packed his bags and kissed my forehead

Him: if anything happens while I am away call Chace okay he will protect you

Me: baby where are you going?

Him: and please don't just allow anyone in while I am gone

He was starting to scare me and he gave me directions to Mpho's Hospital and kissed my forehead

Me: Kenny please how long will you be gone?

Him: I don't know here is all my pins and should anything happen to me please call Lucky he will sort out all my money and share it with you and the kids

Me: how long will you be gone?

He kissed my forehead and hugged me

Me: Kenneth Swanepoel Jnr talk to me now. You cannot leave me with the kids alone

Ken: I will send Gertrude to come and help you

He pulled me in for a hug again and kissed my forehead he rested his forehead on mine and looked into my eyes I saw tears form in his eyes

Him: beautiful

He kissed my cheek and tried to get up, I pulled him to me and we shared a kiss I didn't want to break it and I could feel he didn't want to break it as well

Me: I love you come back

Him: I will I love you

He held my face with both his hand and I held his arms his body was shaking, he walked out and left I heard his car start in the garage and I sat on the bed why was he this shaken and scared I have never seen fear in his eyes I swear he acted as if this is a last goodbye. I tried to sleep but nothing I couldn't I have a bad feeling about this and I don't like it. I took out my phone and called Chace Busi answered

Her: hello

Me: hey Busi

She sounded surprised to hear my voice

Me: I am sorry for calling in this late it's just I don't have anyone to talk to and I thought of you guys

Her: by calling Chace at this night

Me: because Kenny decided to leave without informing me where he is going after he received a call he just told me to be strong and he doesn't know if he will be back or not

I heard sounds in the background

Her: it Amanda, she says Ken left and she doesn't know where he went

Him: Amanda

Me: hi

Him: I am coming now I need you to tell me everything

He hung up and I tried calling Kenny but it was off. It went straight to voicemail. And soon enough I heard the doorbell waking Tino and I walked to him picking him up and feeding him his bottle. I opened the door and Chace was standing there he came in and Tino was still not calming down

Him: give him here

He took him examined him calling Busi to come here with medication in the morning to help my son

Him: he is suffering from colic but he is going to be fine with uncle Chace right. Now tell me about Kenny

Me: he received a call from a Mr Wong and after the call he just hung up and packed his things giving me instructions he didn't tell me about what they were discussing

He nodded and I heard the door turning over and over again. Chace reached under the couch and took out a gun which I did not know was there and he pointed at the door while we hid behind the couch. A woman carrying a small child came in, she switched on the light

Me: Gertrude?

She looked at us and dropped her bags while holding her infant close to her

Her: please don't shoot

Tino started crying causing Gertrude's baby to cry as well great and Chace lowered the weapon

Her: Mr Kenny told me to move in here and that his other house is not safe

She said this hushing her daughter, I moved closer to her and Chace put the gun back where he found it. The little lady looked like Mpilo a little

Chace: okay ladies until I find Kenny I will keep tabs on you take care

He walked to me and hugged me

Him: be careful and don't hesitate to call me understood. You saw where one of the gun is don't hesitate to use it

I nodded and he left there is no way i am touching that gun

\*CHAPTER 62\*

After Chace left I was alone with Gertrude and she was breastfeeding her daughter.

Me: she is pretty

She looked at me and her baby

Her: thank you

Me: how old is she?

I gently laid my screaming boy on my lap rubbing his back it seemed to soothe him

Her: a few weeks old

Me: oh my boy is a month now

I kept brushing him and he gently went to sleep on his own

Her: he is pretty

Me: thank you. I hope you don't mind me asking, who is her father?

She looked at me

Her: dan is the father

She looked down at her baby playing with her tiny hand

Me: oh

Her: yes she is a premature

She kissed her hand

Me: let me show you to the extra room

She followed me to the spare bedroom and I bid her goodnight I walked back to the lounge and sat with my son laying on the couch. I tried to close my eyes but I couldn't sleep what is happening what if he never comes back what then? His children will grow up without a father. What am I going to say to Chesray when he wakes up "hi baby I am sorry your father just up and left in the middle of the night". This is not fair on my son he lost his mother now his father. What he did will never be fair he is inconsiderate. I tried calling his phone and it went straight to voicemail I called five times and threw it on the wall watching it break while I rested my head on my hand

I don't know how I fell asleep but I woke up when Tino was crying and I picked him up checking the time it was 5:30am usually the time Ken wakes up Ray giving him a bath. I gave Tino his pacifier putting him in his cot and walked to Ray's bedroom he was still fast

how do you explain to a child that both his parents left him with me and I am now the only parent he has

I gently shook him up and he looked at me with his sleepy eyes

Me: get up baby

He reluctantly woke up

Me: time for school

Him: where is daddy?

Me: daddy left and asked me to bathe you

He looked really sad

Me: I promise I won't hurt you

He stood up and walked to the bathroom

Him: are you going to give me a bath?

I nodded and he got in

Him: will he be back today?

Me: I don't know baby but he has to come back right

He nodded, while I filled the bathtub with water

\*ZODWA\*

The thought he could get rid of me like I don't exist. I have given everything, my heart and body my soul a piece of my DNA, my virginity and he thought all this will be forgotten 20 fucken years we have been together I watched him chase other women come back and apologise I forgive him he can't do the same for one mistake. He marries another woman and leaves me alone I love him, reason why I came up with a plan to trick Mr Wong into my scheme. And we used his one weakness which was Amanda

I guess Kenny taught me well, I know how much Mr Wong hates pregnant prostitutes and when I devised a plan to fake my pregnancy and pin it on Kenny causing their deal to be sour. Wong wants his women clean so to him I am six months pregnant I would push his clients away causing him to lose money. I told him I have a way to get us more money he shipped me back to South Africa. Hence now I followed him to the airport he was supposed to meet Wong to "kill" my baby and that is when we caught him, me and member's of Wong's crew

I watched him groan as he tried to get up I walked over to him and kissed his lips he was still out of it.



\*AMANDA\*

I wiped him clean and helped him get dressed combing his hair

Me: you need to get a cut baby

Him: daddy said he would do it today

Me: okay

I couldn't tell him that his father might not come back I couldn't break his little heart I myself am struggling to cope. I fixed his tie and we walked to the kitchen I found Gertrude making food for all of us her baby was sharing a cot with Tino who looked restless

Naledi: mama

She gave me a kiss on the cheek and looked at Gertrude

Her: aunty G

Gertrude: baby

They shared a hug and Mpilo came walking towards me and I picked her up

Me: morning baby

She gave me a hug and I kissed her forehead

Her: daddy?

Me: he is not here

She looked at me confused and got down running to our bedroom

Me: baby

I run after her and when she got in she found an empty room and was about to cry

Me: baby daddy will be back with ice-cream and sweets do you want that

She nodded uh.ha looking down

Me: come be a good girl for daddy okay he will be back

Her: daddy

Me: shh my baby

I walked back with her and Naledi looked at me

Me: not now baby, we will talk

Their transport came and I was about to escort them to the door when Freddie got in great

Me: hi stranger

Him: hi Chace asked me to escort the kids

Me: where to?

Him: school of course and he asked me to stay here until he comes back, come kids

I hugged them and I gave them both R200

Naledi: mama this is not 50

Me: I know just take it

They walked out with Freddie while I sat there trying to feed myself but I had no appetite. I sat on the couch and closed my eyes

\*ZODWA\*

He was about to open his eyes and I drugged him again. Watching him this helpless brought pleasure in my heart. I want him to lose everything like I have. I looked at him again his perfect handsome face, his muscled up body. I lifted his shirt up and snuggled up against him. It feels good to be close to him to smell him to touch him. I ran my fingers up and down his body all the memories we had played in my head, the crazy love we used to make. How everyone thought we were a perfect couple. How he used to listen to my commands especially after catching him cheat.

Why did he break us like this? I blame him he pushed me when he married that brother loving whore. He chose her over me the mother of child and now he made her the mother of his other child. She thinks she is winning, Wong thinks he is winning everyone thinks they are winning nobody know that they are losing except for me. I will never lose to anyone anymore I am taking back everything that is mine. Now what is left is to get my son and my whole family will be complete Wong can go choke on his own saliva for all I care.

\*AMANDA\*

I checked the time and it was 15h00 I passed on the couch until that time

Getty: don't worry I fed your son and gave them all a bath

Me: thank you

She nodded

Me: I have to go

I remembered I have to visit Mpho I tried to remember the directions ken gave to me

Me: can I leave them with you

Her: of course and your friend Busi was here she dropped this medication for your son

Me: yeah he has colic

Her: my niece had colic and I took care of her so he is in good hands

Me: thank you

I stood up and took my car keys. I drove first to the mall to get him fresh pyjamas and food I know how much he loves food afterwards I drove to the hospital and requested to see Mpho I waited in the reception area and he came to me and we shared the longest hug ever he was even growing a beard I broke the hug and looked at him kissing his forehead

Me: baby are you okay

He smiled

Him: daddy is back in business baby

Me: oh God no

I shook my head and he smiled he really looked good my boy is growing up. I gave him food and the clothes and looked happy to see them. We had a conversation and I tried by all means not to tell him about Ken and the situation at home. I drove home and found three cars on the drive way really can I not be alone. I got in and found Kenneth's dad sitting with Chace and Busi

Me: hi

They greeted me back and I was really exhausted I didn't have the energy to entertain them. Kenneth senior kissed both my cheeks asking how I am doing and he was sweet Busi made tea for me and Chace was on his laptop. Kenny's laptop which caused me to think about him I felt claustrophobic sitting close to them I just wanted to be alone to think and breathe

Gertrude: you son is awake

I took him and he was crying I brushed his back walking up and down with him and laid him on the his tummy brushing his back he wouldn't stop crying. Eventually Chace took him from me they could see the frustration in my eyes, I just wanted to be alone with my children can I at least get that being alone with my children. Something in me busted out and I let a loud wail and Busi came to me, for a moment I felt like I was losing my mind.

My child is cry like crazy Ken has left without telling me where he is going. My son is in hospital, Ray and Mpilo miss their father my house is filled with people coming in and out.

Me: can I just be alone!

I just sobbed on her shoulder while she brushed my back

Lucky: hello everyone

We all turned to look at him and Gertrude tried to hide her daughter as they made eye contact.

Naledi: mama please take this

I saw Ray and Mpilo looking at me like I was crazy for screaming out as she gave me my anti-depressants and I snatched them throwing them against the wall. I don't need them they are just holding me back

## CHAPTER 63\*

Naledi: Mama!

I realised that I hurt my daughter and walked towards her

Me: I am sorry nana

I was still shocked looking at Lucky it feels surreal with him here he walked towards father and they shared a hug he shared a man hug with Chace and winked at me and Busi before moving to Gertrude looking at her and her baby

Her: I need to go lay down

Him: Gertrude

Her: excuse me

She ran to the bedroom with her daughter

Chace: we also need to get going

Naledi took Mpilo with her and I took Chesray to his bedroom so he could sleep. I switched of the light and walked to the lounge, Chace handed me the peaceful Tino everyone had left it was just us two

Him: call me if anything happens okay or if Kenny contacts you okay?

He kissed my forehead and lifted my head up cupping my chin

Him: take care and sleep well and tomorrow I am getting you the anti-depressants and you wont throw them like you did just now

He walked out and I sat on the couch watching my son sleeping peacefully I brushed his tiny cheek and looked up. Lucky must have found a room to rest his head.

Ray: aunty Amanda

I looked at him and he looked scared

Me: yes baby and please call me mom

He did not smile just looked at me

Me: okay what is wrong baby?

Him: I had a nightmare

He was holding his blanket and a story book

Me: I am sorry baby

He looked down

Me: come do you want to sleep with me so we can chase away bad dreams?

He didn't respond he just looked down and I stood up taking tino and holding Ray's hand as we walked to my bedroom. I gently placed Tino in his cot and Ray slept on the bed, I switched on the lamp and read him the story about the rabbit and the fox. He was paying close attention and asking about certain part and I tried to explain in an animated voice, after a while he fell asleep and I wrapped my hand around him as he slept. I gently closed my eyes as well. I woke up when I felt pressure on my face and I realised Ray was cuddling me his whole body around me and I gently shifted him so I could breathe and went back to sleep with my arms around me.

I woke up in the middle of the night and calmed Tino down feeding him and changing his nappy it happened three times and it was dawn time for the kids to go to school. I woke Ray up and gave him a bath helping get dressed. When I was down I walked down and made the breakfast because Gertrude was sleeping and Lucky was nowhere to be seen

Freddie: are you guys ready

I forgot he transports my kids

Them: yes uncle

I gave them money and kissed they foreheads

Ray: bye

He hugged me and I hugged him back after they left I walked back to my room but I saw bags outside Gertrude's room I walked closer to ask her where she was going and heard her and Lucky arguing

Him: Gertrude where are going?

Her: home I cannot stay here

Him: is this my daughter?

Her: NO! STOP! This is Dan's child

Him: come on everyone can see she looks like

Her: Lucky please Dan and I are getting married and he know Hannah as his daughter

Lucky: so he doesn't know she is mine

Her: Lucky stop

Wait they have a child together so they slept together before he left, why should I be affected I was busy with his brother breaking his heart

Him: don't marry him come live with me

Her: no Lucky you can just come in my life and tell me I should give up everything and come with you

Him: you told me you love me

Her: I told you and you rejected me and told me you love someone else, I poured my fucken heart out and you decided to move on and fly away leaving me pregnant. And no lucky I guess it was the hormones that love you. Dan has been nothing but supportive, he helped raise my child and you brother he knew it was your kid and he gave me the house that you fucken left. He treated this pregnancy like it was his and bought me food every month even though he never came to visit me but you, you never even called me once to ask me how I was doing, nor did you even think about me lucky I have moved on and found happiness

Him: I am sorry Gertrude my leaving you after the confession, I was to get my head right and come to terms that the woman I loved is never coming back to me. And I knew I had to make room for you because you are beautiful and you don't deserve to be treated the way I treated you. You are a queen a beautiful being and I didn't mean to be a monster please forgive me please. Allow me to be in your life as well as my baby's life. I can move back with Sandile take him out of boarding and bring him here we could be a family

I peeped and he had his head on her shoulder

Her: Lucky stop

He dropped to his feet holding her hands

Him: please beautiful please don't leave me

Her: get up

Him: I am sorry Dan is raising Hanna but really I do know that I love you and I don't want to lose you again you mean a lot to me please sweet heart please

She closed her eyes and he hugged her and kissed her

Her: Dan is marrying me

She said this more like a whisper

Him: do you love him?

She pushed him

Her: I don't know

Him: it is simple yes or no

Her: dammit lucky, fuck you

She threw a slap across his face

Him: just answer me

She slapped him again and he picked her up and kissed her after he broke the kiss

Him: yes or no

I closed my eyes and walked to my bedroom and threw myself on the bed closing my eyes and remembering his touch, the way he made me feel. I found his shirt and I sniffed it. His scent was there I remember the last time we made love. I remembered his voice the way he looked at me and made me laugh the way he used to walk the changes he made for me and in me

Me: where are you Kenny please?

I opened my eyes and walked to Naledi's room Mpilo was still sleeping I picked her up and realised she wet the bed her diaper was extra full. I changed it and weird enough she slept through that. I scooped her up and walked her to my bedroom and walked back to Naledi's room changing the bedroom suit and took the dirty ones to the laundry to wash them. I laid on my bed and looked up I didn't even hear Tino crying, Lucky came in and found me like that

Him: Amanda!

Me: hmm

Him: can you not hear you son crying

I jumped up and walked to him taking him in my arms and hushing him, but he was so upset that the crying continued and it was frustrating, he took him from me and managed to calm him down resting him on the bed.

Him: stop it what is wrong with you? Where is the feisty Amanda I know who took charge at life? Who took herself out of a bad marriage where is she?

Me: you don't know how I am feeling

Him: hell I do he is my brother but you don't see me breaking apart do you? Pull yourself together, the children need you now more than anything dammit

Me: get out

Him: you are better than this sulking Amanda and as for neglecting your children

I slapped him and he slapped me back

Him: that one is to toughen you up mama wethu we need you strong please. I am sorry for slapping you but you need to realise your kids need you get a grip

Two weeks passed and there was still no sign of him not even an sms nothing, Mpho was out and he was better than before back to his old self and I love this happy mood he is in. he learned to forgive Naledi, I realised that Kenny being away was not easy for the kids especially Mpilo and Ray who constantly ask about him I wish I had answers for them but I didn't and it was frustrating. I knew I had to take control my house was falling apart and it is better for Kenny come to a united house.

After Lucky's word I sat down and evaluated myself, I realised I have allowed myself to be weakened by the idea of love. I have been strong all my life only to be broken over and over. How long should we women be supper strong and fight, I was strong on the last moments of my marriage, I was strong being raped for the first time. I was strong when Lucky found me and I became weak when I was put on my deathbed when I was raped and lost hope. I am a mother a daughter a wife a sister a friend a grandmother to a child that was never born that has never seen life and tasted what is like to be human. Life has been throwing me to the wolves and I keep allowing it to beat me down constantly. Now it is time to put my children first

**\*\*KENNY\*\***

I could see her in my dreams the woman that I love the mother of my children, she has had a tough time in life she has been through hell and forth and she always allowed life to



swallow her, hallowing in a pit of weakness and pity. She has always allowed people to walk all over her

I could feel her in my dreams and touch her, make love to her and be there for her yet somehow I felt distant from here. I opened my eyes and looked around I was in an unfamiliar room and my whole body was tired it feels like I have been asleep for years

Her: dammit I am out of stock!

She threw things around and I gently opened my eyes and found the face I wish I never seen in my life

Me: Ntombizodwa

Her: baby

Oh boy

\*ZODWA\*

I thought the plan was water proof and nothing can flowed. I had to move Kenny from Wong's people after the call I received. My thoughts were disturbed when a call come through

Me: hello

Wong: the deal is off I am coming for both you and your family

Me: I have him it is a matter of time before he wakes up sir

Wong: you said that two weeks back

Me: I know I just need the tranquilizers can you send them to me

Wong: I want my money or your son is dead

He hung up and I threw the phone across the wall. I haven't been able to get my son because of Freddie and Chace dammit. I called my lawyer to draw up divorce papers for Kenny and Amanda I walked over to his sleeping body and kissed his lips

Me: baby

I saw him slightly open his eyes dammit it is too soon for him to wake up I searched for the tranquilizers and they were finished

Me: dammit I am out of stock

Him: Ntombizodwa

Me: baby

I walked closer to him

Me: hi baby we are together now and we will be together forever

He looked at me confused and weak

CHAPTER 64\*

\*NTOMBIZODWA\*

I kept looking at his confused face as he sat up and I helped him

Him: why am I here? What is going on? Where is Wong?

He looked at my stomach

Him: aren't you pregnant?

Me: shh!!!!

I couldn't answer him now my plans are failing

Me: baby its me Ntombi

Him: I know it's you dammit

I sat on top off him and he pushed me hard falling on the floor it hurts being rejected by the person you love, for two weeks he was mine and also I couldn't have him fully because he was drugged

Me: baby please can't you see I am doing this for us

Him: this is not normal

He tried to get up when he realised I had tied his legs to the bed

Me: you pushed me to this. I love you don't you understand we have been together for so long and I really don't want to lose you again

Him: Ntombi!

Me: no she fed you something Kenny think we have been through a lot together and wena you just up and decide to marry the person who fucked your brother

Him: you don't even know what happened

Me: I do she bewitched you, and now she has my son

I looked at him and my tears came out I am not losing Kenny again I can't lose my family again I worked hard

Me: please Kenny I love you please don't push me away

He looked at me and looked up

Him: oh Ntombi what have you done, where is Wong?

Me: I took the first step of drawing up the divorce papers for you and that witch

Him: this is crazy!

Me: I am saving you from the witch's lair please this is for us you will thank me later

He closed his eyes and his facial muscles tightened up

Him: you are right baby I am sorry for not believing you

I looked at him in disbelief he is just playing

Him: I am sorry my love I have hurt you so badly, we have been together for so long and I married some I saw seven months earlier while you and I have been together forever, I cheated and you cheated on my house in my bedroom and its fair that I forgive you. That witch has really bewitched me she is the devil herself

Me: baby?

Him: come here

I walked to him and cuddled next to him he wrapped his arms around me and I felt his grip tighten

Me: Kenny

I was struggling to breathe

Me: Kenny please I can't

He continued and I felt my breathe escape I closed my eyes being consumed by darkness

\*AMANDA\*

I decided to take control of my life and look after Ken's businesses at least he will still have them when he comes back. It was frustrating just sitting home not doing anything it was heart breaking hearing Mpilo asking about Ken, Lucky tried being there for her but she wanted Ken and I felt bad that she is rejecting her real father. I come to work with my little son because seriously his crying was getting to everyone's nerves. And Getty was taking care of Mpilo and her little Hannah.

I was on a call with the managers from the hotels he owned I didn't know he owned so many and the stuff was too much. We were discussing ways to improve the hotels and Nancy was helping out. The door opened and I thought it was the P.A I didn't look up

Me: please put the coffee on the table and take out the trash on your way out and call Mr Patel I want to discuss the finances with him

Mal: you full of it wena

I looked up and saw him standing on the door leaning against the door frame

Me: Mal! I mean Daluxolo actually Xolo

He chuckled

Him: in the flesh baby

I jumped up and walked to him and we shared a hug

Him: how are you holding up?

He removed the hair from my face

Me: I don't know where he is what he is eating who he is with why did he run away. Its torture and I hate it. The kids are asking when is he coming back. Does dad love us? I have to be strong for them and be strong for myself as well. I just wish I can get a sign

Him: and Chace is he not helping?

Me: he is helping but he is still preoccupied by Jay. Talking about her how is she?

Him: we have seen worse days but for now we are hoping for the best

We shared a hug and broke it

Him: let me go and see how to help out okay

I nodded and he walked to my sleeping son kissed his forehead and walked away from us. I looked at the time and it was lunch time. I packed my bags and walked to the nearest restaurant with my baby. I sat down and feed my baby while I placed my order, I brushed his back helping him burp and brushed his tummy giving him his pacifier

Lizzy: and I seeing a stranger

I looked up

Me: Lizzy

She was very much pregnant

Me: long time

I stood up and we shared a hug

Her: indeed a long time can I sit

Me: sure go ahead

Her: wow Amanda since you moved her you have no time for me do you

Me: you are the one who has no time for me

Her: ah no my friend a lot has happened since you dumped me, Anele has been missing and I have been having a good time in life

Me: really I can see Sibonelo has been very busy there

She laughed like I said a joke

Her: I wish hey, well Sibonelo and I divorced a long time ago since his parents loved the baby mama. Apparently everyone thought I was barren and that I am the one who cant have kids hee

She slapped her hands dramatically

Her: so I thought I can't live like this I am not giving up but I am done with people judging me and I am done with that family you have been my role model for being strong friend and walking away from a broken marriage

I smiled when she said that am I really a role model

Her: so I met a new guy and the first time I laid eyes on him baby we made love through our eyes and then moved to making physical love

Me: really

Her: and on the first shot he scored, I wasted my years with Sibonelo only to have new guy score on the first night first sperm my friend. Pela I was made to believe I can't have kids and I thought live once

Me: were you not afraid of STDs

Her: eish Amanda I wasn't thinking clear and I needed him I really did

Me: my baby is hearing this

Her: baby don't be an asshole to you wife or life will humble you

We chuckled and my order came while she made has, I waited for hers and we ate together

Me: so he is barren than his baby mama?

Her: I don't think that is his child karma baby

Me: so what brings you here?

Her: baby daddy has family drama to deal with here apparently his little sister's cousin needs help

We continue having lunch and went home straight because my baby was screaming his lungs out he was really annoyed and pink. As soon as I got in I found almost everyone there

Me: Karabo and Mandla and is it Kamo

He shook my hand and kissed it

Me: well it is good to see you and sad to see you in times like this

We had a brief conversation and I walked to my bedroom to calm my baby and after he calmed down I gently placed him on his cot and I rested my head on the cot I was super tired and my baby was draining the last I had as energy I closed my eyes and I heard the song suddenly by Billy Ocean play in my head and every memory I had with Ken played in my head and I found myself crying again

Me: Ken please just give me a sign please

I opened my eyes and Mpilo came to me

Her: mama ka Mpilo

Me: baby ka mama

She threw her arms around me and I kissed her cheek

Me: are you hungry

She nodded and we walked to the kitchen only to find Mandla and Chace arguing

Mandla: so you practically have nothing

Chace: and do you have anything? No right so shut the fuck up

Mandla: don't take your failures on me

They both stood up

Lucky: can everyone just calm down

Mandla threw a punch and Chace returned it was surreal to watch

Busi and Karabo: stop fighting

Nobody could stop them I took the gun from the hiding place and shot up I heard people screaming

Mal: Amanda!

He pushed me and Mpilo out as the ceiling collapse it looks simple on the TV and not in real life my whole body was shaking and Mpilo couldn't stop crying Lucky took her and walked out of the room

Mal: are you okay?

I nodded

Me: please stop

My voice was drained and strained

Me: we need to work together please we need to find Ken and all this fighting is not good

The door opened and my kids came running to me

Naledi: mom I heard a shot are you okay?

Chesray just looked like he saw a ghost while Mpho greeted everyone

Me: I am okay relax I am fine

They hugged me and I told them to go and change. The remainder of the day went by fast. The following day I woke up to an empty house just me and my baby my kids went to school and nobody came to crowd my house. A knock came through as I was about to leave for work and a brown envelop was handed to me. I sighed for it and it was divorce papers, I kept looking at it in disbelief he has been missing for weeks and he wants a divorce is he kidding me. I screamed out in frustration and Chace came in

Him: hey I was in Kenny's study room looking at his cameras and hacking his phone and I heard you scream

Me: he wants a divorce

Him: are you serious?

I threw the papers on his face and broke down, he pulled me in for a hug and I cried in his shoulders. How could he hurt me like this? What is wrong with him? Chace lifted my face up

Him: calm down I don't think it's him

Me: why isn't he fighting for us, two fucken weeks and then divorce papers I am tired Chace I am really tired

While talking I felt his lips on mine and I pushed him

Me: no

Him: I am sorry

He kissed me again and I broke it again this is not right. He looked at the papers and looked at the lawyers name and chuckled taking his phone and called Mal and Mandla discussing the papers after the call he looked at me

Him: I am sorry I kissed you we will never talk about ever deal

I looked at him defeated

Him: Ken is coming home and I am going to make sure of it

We walked to my bedroom and he opened Ken's closet and a secret drawer taking out a gun

Him: I have a feeling Mr van Noordwyk is going to talk

He said this walking out

\*CHAPTER 65\*

\*KENNY\*

Looking at Ntombi broke my heart she was once the woman I loved and now she is just the mother of my son a crazy person driven by love to be where she is. I didn't have the heart to kill her at all how will my son look at me knowing I killed his mother? I heard a phone ringing and I looked at it's direction it was on the floor smashed but not broken it was not far from the bed and I took it I couldn't see what was happening I just answered

Me: hello

Wong: who is speaking? Where is Ntombi?

Me: Mr Wong?

He chuckled



Him: how love has found its way home, so you two thought you would just play me like this?

Me: I don't know what you are talking about

Him: well you will know when I finally show you who is boss, I hope you kissed your son goodbye when you left because I am on my way to finish what I have started

Me: wait... don't!...

He hung up and I kept holding the phone close to my ear my boy my son and there is nothing I can do I felt the weakness consume me and I let a few tears down

\*AMANDA\*

After Chace left I walked over to my son and I picked him up

Me: baby daddy is coming home

I spun around with him and kissed his forehead and for the first time in forever he flashed me a genuine smile and I couldn't stop kissing his face. I walked to the kitchen to make a snack and Freddie came in holding Ray

Me: why isn't he at school?

Freddie: they came out early

Me: where is Mpho and Naledi?

Freddie: they went shopping and the other one is hanging with the guys

Me: I wonder what Naledi is getting

Him: no Mpho went shopping and Naledi is with the guys

My mouth was wide open

Him: I am kidding relax

Ray: can we also go shopping

Me: of course cupcake

We walked out and I strapped my son in and did the same to my Ray he smiled as I strapped him in and I kissed his forehead

Freddie: I am coming with mommy

I rolled my eyes and he took the car keys and we drove to the mall. When we got there we hit a few stalls looking for clothes and Ray was picking his own with a smile on his face he was even hopping around and holding my hand in some places.

Him: can I buy this please?

I looked at the piece of toto he wanted, who am I to deny a child something he wants. We are raising our children in a free society yet oppressing them when it comes to other things because they do not fit the social norms is it really worth it to deny your child something because it is bad

Me: do you love it?

He nodded and kept looking at it

Me: are you going to wear?

Him: yes please

I nodded and he picked it up smiling

Freddie: what are you doing?

Me: I couldn't break his heart

Freddie: he is a man

Me: that is the thing he is a kid and learning

Freddie: Kenny wont like this

Me: well Kenny is not here and I am

We went to grab something to eat and drove home

Freddie: I have to go I will see you soon okay

I nodded and he walked out at the same time Mpho and Naledi walked in

Mpho: finally we have the house to ourselves

Me: you so mean

Naledi: finally I can be naked

She took off her dress and was left with her underwear

Her: where is Mpilo?

Me: with Lucky and Gertrude

She nodded and we decided to watch TV as they started telling me about their day. A knock came in while we were talking

Me: who is it?

Him: delivery for Lucky

I opened the door and there was a big box

Him: sign here ma'am

I took the pen and I was about to sign when I felt a cold metal on my forehead

Him: Mr Wong it's just her and the kids

Me: who are you?

My voice was shaking and tears were on my eyes

Wong: the new Mrs of Kenny is it not?

Me: what do you want?

He walked over to the kids and they ran to me. My phone started vibrating and I pressed the answer button

Chace: Amanda I need you to leave the house now

Tino started crying and I walked over to him

Me: can I take my child please

Chace: Amanda what is going on?

Kenny: babe can you hear me

Wong: did you call someone

Me: no

Wong: I am not stupid I can hear them

He yanked the phone from my pocket and a smile appeared on his face

Wong: oh say goodbye

He hung up and pointed the gun at Ray, I gave Tino to Naledi and I rushed over to him and stood in front of him

Me: please don't hurt him

Wong: I am not going to hurt him, I am going to kill him

He cocked the gun and the door opened Lucky rushed in with Mandla and I saw him pull the trigger I didn't see which way the bullet went as I covered Ray. The door opened and Kenny came rushing in with Chace and Mal, Ken was dragging Ntombi with him. I looked at Ray

Me: are you okay baby

Him: yes

\*KENNY\*

I sat there thinking of a way out I searched her body but the keys were not there dammit my son. I heard people breaking down the door and Chace walked in with Mal

Me: you took your time really

Chace: you taught her well

He looked at her

Me: I hope she is not dead

He shook his head

Chace: very much alive

Mal: do you by chance know where the keys are

I shook my head

Mal: old fashion way I guess

He took out a pin and started fiddling with the cuffs

Chace: if I didn't know better I would say this is sexy and kinky

Me: wow, how did you find me?

Chace: divorce papers were sent and they came from Noordwyk's office and the last time we used him she was here and that's when I knew it had to be her so we paid him a visit and he started singing after the third bullet in his leg

Me: charming

Finally I was free

Chace: you need to shower

Me: I was here for two fucken weeks don't tell me about showering

The laughed

Me: we need to get going Wong is going for my child

Chace: what? Today we left Amanda alone we thought we should give her peace

I closed my eyes

Me: call and tell her to leave the house

Ntombi groaned and opened her eyes and was shocked to see me free

Me: don't be afraid we going home. I have a surprise for you

We got in the car and Chace called Amanda she picked up but she wasn't talking we knew she was in endanger, Mal called the rest of the guys to go to the house when Wong told us to say goodbye

Me: see what you have done

Her: I am sorry

Me: I hope for your sake my children are fine

When we arrive there were dead bodies and Naledi was half naked holding Tino she was crying

Her: dad he is not breathing

Chace walked over to him and after a seconds working on him I heard his cries again, all this time I kept squeezing Ntombi's neck Amanda was holding on to Chesray and he was crying

Me: see what you have done

Ntombi: baby I am sorry

She tried to walked to Ray and he looked at Amanda

\*AMANDA\*

I was holding Chersay and Ntombi was apologising when I heard Ray calling mom I thought he was referring to Ntombizodwa and he pulled my face to him

Me: baby

Ray: I am scared mommy

I felt warmth when he referred to me as mommy, the thought of losing two son's hit me

Me: I am here baby don't be scared

I wiped his tears and looked around

Me: Mpho!

I couldn't hear him and I moved from Ray and saw blood on him

Me: baby are you shot

He shook his head

Him: you are shot mommy

I froze as the reality of the pain started hitting me I slowly looked down wishing it wasn't true afraid of the reality of dying and I saw blood coming out indeed I was shot

Kenny: honey!

I felt tears escape again this time the pain was unbearable I was gasping for air, I looked over at Ken and he took a gun pointing it at Ntombizodwa, Ray was about to look when I pulled his face to look at mine

Me: mommy will be fine okay

I heard two shoots and I knew ken had killed her as he rushed to me and I couldn't take it anymore I collapsed on his arms

Him: honey I am back

Me: I know and I love you and your stinking odour

He smiled and kissed me as I closed my eyes

Chace: bring here her now, you not dying on me now

Mal: no Chace she won't handle it

He was also crying

\*CHAPTER 66\*

Kenny: Mal we have to do it, it is our only choice. Baby open your eyes now please

He hit my cheeks a couple of times and I struggled keeping my eyes open, they placed me on the table I tried by all means to open my eyes but it was difficult

Chace: bring the whiskey now!

He opened it and poured it on the wound causing the most severe burning sensation I closed my eyes trying to fight the pain and ken placed a cloth between my teeth muffing my screams

Mal: please! Jesus you are hurting her!

Chace: we need to get the bullet out or she won't make it

He helped me sit up

Chace: drink this

He shove the bottle down my throats and I screamed out at the pain I opened my eyes and Ken made me look at him we were both sweating and Lucky escorted the children out

Kenny: baby focus on me okay

I nodded my whole body was shaking in anticipation of the pain I am about to feel

Chace: are you ready

I kept looking at ken when I felt the most intense pain in my body I almost screamed feeling his fingers dig into my wound

Kenny: it's okay honey

Chace: I got it

The pain was too intense to even imagine I couldn't stop screaming and crying at the same time so much so that I lost consciousness I could hear Ken and Mal screaming my name and Chace performing CPR I wanted to tell him I am fine I am still here but my body was not moving only my mind was working everything was shutting down.

I am not allowing my mind to shut the thoughts of my babies without a mother, what if Kenny marries another woman and she turns out to be like Ntombi and hurt my children? Tino can he really grow up without me especially with his crying and irritability they need me as for Ken he won't be able to handle losing me. I cannot die now, Ray just accepted me as his mother he needs his mom. Mpho where is my son?

I heard the heart monitor beating faster and I opened my eyes slowly, Chace removed some of the pipes attached to me and shone his light on my eyes examining me and writing on a chart

Chace: hello

Me: hi

My voice was dry and could still feel the pain

Chace: do you know what day it is today?

I told him and smiled

Chace: do you know your name

Me: yes Amanda Tshetlo

He looked at me

Me: I am kidding my name is Amanda Swanepoel married to Kenneth Swanepoel who refuses his father and loves his mother more than anything

He chuckled

Chace: I am glad you made it, your body went through a traumatic event I am glad you fought through

He brushed my forehead and walked out as Kenny walked in

Him: baby

Me: honey

Him: s'thandwa sam'

It's still weird when he speaks vernacular

Me: my handsome husband

He was holding me looking into my eyes

Him: my beautiful wife

We kissed before sharing an embrace

Him: I thought I lost you forever

Me: I am not going anywhere without you

Him: don't even think about leaving me I was about to go to heaven and fetch you if I must

Me: I don't think that is how it works

He smiled and blow air on my neck like I was a five year old and I giggled and winced when the pain hit me

Him: are you okay?

I nodded trying to hide the pain from him

Him: I have been shot more than once don't lie to me

Me: it hurts so badly and the pain doesn't want to go away

He helped me back down and brushed my forehead before kissing it

Me: where is Mpho?

Him: outside waiting to see you



Lucky came in carrying Mpilo she didn't notice Kenny

Her: mama?

I crawled up to me hurting me and I tried my best not to scare her she perked her lips on mine and hugged me

Her: why you here?

Her sentence was not perfect but I could make out what she was asking

Me: mama is sick

Her: sorry neh

I nodded and hugged her again, she turned and saw Ken just looking at her and the way she jumped up one would swear they really are father and daughter, I was even forgotten in the moment she threw herself in his arms and he spun her around she kept kissing him and brushing his face telling him how much she loves him and telling him all the things she did and witnessed my baby has a loud mouth like her father Lucky

Lucky: hi

Me: hi

Lucky: how are you feeling?

Me: I am feeling a bit better thank you

He nodded and smiled

Lucky: brother can we talk outside

Kenny: no it's fine we can talk here you don't mind right Amy

I nodded

Lucky: I was thinking

Kenny: you are always thinking

Lucky: no this is serious, I want to settle down

We both looked at him shocked why am I shocked I mean I am married I should be happy for him

Lucky: last night after the shooting I realised I cannot die single and leave my child in a foreign boarding school without a real family. So I know how much Sandile was fond of both Manda I mean Amanda

I looked down

Lucky: and Gertrude so I proposed to Gertrude I cannot allow Dan to raise my kid I mean I have already lost her and it was a choice I thought was best considering how much she loves you so if I can get your blessing brother you have raised my kids like they are your own while I ran away from my problems

He smiled at Lucky

Kenny: I should formally welcome her as my little sister, you break her heart and I swear I will forget you are my little brother she has been through a lot, I found her in the streets hungry and begging and I took her in and helped her, took her to school she finished and opted to pay me by being my domestic worker although she has a degree

Lucky: I promise to take good care of her

He tried to take Mpilo and she pushed his hands off her while burying her face on Kenny's neck

Me: welcome to my world of being reject by your own child

They laughed

Kenny: it's because I have given her the best life

Me: it's because you are spoiling her

Lucky walked out and my children walked in I hugged them all Tino was screaming as always Kenny placed Mpilo on the bed and picked Tino up causing her to be sad and Ken picked her up as well. I could see my children were deeply troubled and distant a bit they were not jolly and happy and bubbly not that I could blame them, they have been through a lot all because of Ntombizodwa and her obsession after they left I looked at ken

Me: we deserve a holiday

Him: I agree I can make a booking

I shook my head

Me: give me my phone

He gave it to me and I called Busi

Me: hey

Her: Amanda I heard what happened are you okay?

Me: yes I am fine baby

Her: I am glad you are I feel bad that I couldn't come today, my grandchild is ill and I have to take care of him Chace's instruction

The name of chace and seeing him reminds me of the forbidden kiss and I want to forget about it

Me: I was thinking we deserve to go out as ladies, you, me, Karabo, Lerato, Jay if she is feeling better, Nkosi and the kids

Her: that will be a great idea

Me: for once be away from our husbands and drama and just bond as ladies and deal with our traumas

Her: I couldn't agree more

Me: I will add my other friend Lizzy she is a sweet person and maybe Gertrude since she will be my in-law

Her: I will call Lerato, Nkosi and possibly Jay

Me: and I will call the others bye

Her: bye

Kenny: so you guys don't want us

Me: neh we good

Kenny: two weeks of not touching each other and this is how you treat me

I chuckled

Me: I don't think I want to have sex anymore we good

Him: don't test me

We laughed and he kissed me giving me my sleeping Tino shame he has been through a lot and he was still a baby Mpilo was still clinging on her father how he manages to hold them together and not break the other one's neck is really a miracle that I need to master. Three days later I was released to heal home Mal made sure to visit me every day.

He and Chace had a little fight and they made up after I told him it is not a big deal of course the fight was about the kiss and he told me he deleted the video before Kenny looked at. Kenny came to fetch me and we drove home after signing the discharge papers when I got home my kids made a welcome home party for us. For once my whole family was here in peace and we shared stories and talked about their day. Tino was more relaxed in his father's arms and Kenny knows how to calm him down faster and how to handle him when he is fussy

## CHAPTER 67\*

Kenny: how long are you going to be gone?

Me: it will just for this day we will be back

Kenny: well can I have one for the trip?

I looked at him and he picked me up planting kisses on my face before putting me down and turning me around kissing me from behind, I felt his manhood poking and I knew it was going to be messy I pushed him back

Me: let me go you are not getting anything

He smiled looking into my eyes and kissed my cheek

Kenny: so I am going to be starving while you are gone

Me: something to think about till I came back

I took off my underwear and handed it to him and he sniffed it smiling like a creep

Me: I am going to pretend like I didn't see that

Two weeks has passed since the shooting incident and I was healing well I was so excited about going out with the girls just to relax and "chill" with my children. Kenny has been very clingy this past couple of weeks and same goes to my children especially Ray. Our transport came to pick us up

Me: I have to go Ken

He walked towards me and we shared a kiss he didn't want to let go with his hand roaming my whole body

Me: babe

Him: well you can leave Mpilo and Tino they will stay with me

Me: oh okay thank you I thought they should...

Him: go

He walked us to the car and it was a mini bus

Him: take care

He kissed my forehead and walked to the kids

Him: have fun but not too much fun

We got in and I wore my shades

Mpho: bring on the fun

Naledi: are you sure we are returning tonight

I shook my head

Me: did you pack the bags in

They nodded

Me: one week of fun here we come

We picked up Karabo and her four children, Sifiso, Erica, Mbali and Siya he was a very naughty boy and we picked up Gertrude with Hannah

Karabo: so you are the one with Lucky now

She nodded and kept quiet looking out

Me: relax sister please we are family now

Getty: I am sorry

Me: it is okay

We drove to the resort and Lizzy texted that she will meet us there. We found Busi sitting with Jay and Nkosi and Lerato

Me: ladies

Jay: lady finally we can let down

She looked so beautiful and gained a bit of weight, we walked to the bedrooms and I packed my clothes in my bedroom while the kids packed theirs in their bedroom. We all gathered and the kids excused themselves except for Ray who was sitting on my lap

Me: baby don't you want to hang out

He shook his head

Him: I want to stay here with you

I brushed his hair from his forehead and kissed it

Me: okay baby

He sat by the pool and ordered drinks to celebrate being together

Lerato: can I please have an apple juice

Me: are you...?

Nkosi: bitch why didn't you tell us?

Busi: can you not see the little bump

She smiled

Her: yes I am I didn't want to be but I thought I have put Arthur through a lot and after the fighting I decided he needs to have a family and I am his family

Me: ncaw that is so sweet

Jay: and I have got news to share

Me: what?

Her: my cancer is in remission

I have never been this happy all my life

Ray: mommy I am going now

He got off my lap and perked my lips

Me: be safe okay

He skipped up and down leaving us

Busi: he adores you doesn't he?

Me: I guess he is just a little kid who needs love

She nodded, after our drinks Busi and I with Karabo went in for a spa it was relaxing

Busi: I really needed this I feel so refreshed

Me: all the pain and torture I have endured I deserve a reward

Karabo: I am still in therapy for what Mandla is putting me through

Me: what?

Karabo: he still has multiple personalities there are new ones I know nothing of, trust me I am sick and tired sometimes I feel like giving up he doesn't communicate

Busi: I am so sorry, I am also having problems, I am about to kill Chace this time if he cheats on me, I have been through hell with him

Me: more reasons why we needed this holiday

Our phones rang and it was our husbands

Me: know what let switch them off and just relax no marriage problems and issues

Busi: now you are talking

We switched off our phones, when we were done we walked out and told the rest of the ladies. We drank our cocktails and enjoyed our holidays when the kids came to tell us about their fathers we told them to ignore the calls unless they don't want to enjoy their holidays

Lizzy: Amanda

She waved and walked towards us

Karabo: what do you want?

Lizzy: Amanda invited me

Karabo: I am sorry I can't do this

Lizzy: I am sorry I am dating your brother

Karabo: just fuck off my face!

Jay: ladies please we are here to have fun please calm down and just chill

Karabo: but

Jay: don't let me slap the bitch out of you

\*KENNY\*

Three days went by and their phones were off, it was late at night and Mpilo was feeding me instead of me feeding her, she is really precious. I settled them down for the night and took out a bottle of scotch calling the resort and they told me everyone was still there, the door opened and Chace walked in with his grandchild who was sleeping

Me: she is not back as well

He nodded and I took Leon to the bedroom came back and offered him scotch

Me: here heads up

We drank it and Lucky knocked on the door he came in looking red

Me: just take a glass and join us we are also being ignored

Lucky: they are not back?

We shook our head and drank again, Mandla and Kamo came in furious

Me: don't ask just drink

Chace: we are in the same boat

They all drank up. Mal came with Freddie and they joined us

Chace: you know I love Busi so much and sometimes I feel like shit for treating her like she is shit she deserves all the happiness in the world. I just wish to say sorry to her. I have done a lot of horrible things and with her and the kids away I can see she is the most important thing in the world for me

Mal: I wish my Hilda can come back I nearly lost her to cancer and now she is gone I want her back

Me: yeah I hear you, Chace I forgive you

They all looked at me, they thought I was stupid these are my cameras my technology and really I was looking forward to torturing him

Me: I waiting for the right moment to kill you but hearing you talking about your wife I decided to let go plus my wife was emotional and even in that state she managed to pushed you away before you made the biggest mistake of your lives. Man now I feel what she was feeling while I was gone just disappearing like that. We need to get our wives back

Mandla: I should learn to talk more to Karabo instead of harbouring my feelings I don't even know how angry she is with me until now

Lucky: and I need to appreciate Gertrude it feels empty without her

Me: you are growing up

Kamo: I never thought I would hear you talk like this

Lucky: you all can't keep treating me like a baby

Kamo: and my pregnant girlfriend probably hates me, I can't stop loving these women they are a lot man

We all laughed and continued talking we were very drunk, the doorbell rang and Arthur came in we haven't talked much after he hit Lerato in front of my baby and wife so I had to teach him a lesson

Me: come and join us the wives and girlfriends and fiancés are not here

He chuckled and we poured him the third bottle of scotch we were drinking

Me: we should have married white women

Kamo: trust me you don't want to go there

Mal: they don't know, no offence Chace

Chace: I am not white

Me: drama, so white women are filled with drama



Kamo: they are all the same trust me

We all laughed until I saw my tiny human walking towards me

Her: daddy

Me: peaches

She started crying

Me: you cant sleep

Her: uh.ha

I nodded and she walked to me and rested in my arms

Me: I am sorry baby

I took her back to the bedroom and sang her a lullaby until she closed her little eyes and slept again Leon was also lights out, I walked to the cot and Tino was up staring at the ceiling playing alone, I changed his nappy and fed him rocking on his chair with him

Me: I love you son now sleep for daddy

After a few minutes he closed his eyes and slept peaceful, I closed the door and went back to the guys we walked to the garden and continued chilling there for the night

Me: tomorrow we are going to fetch them

Chace: that is a deal, I can't wait any longer

## CHAPTER 68\*

Three days of not seeing my husband three days of not seeing Mpilo and Valentino. I wonder how he is doing was he calm or crying like usual?

Ray: mom

I turned to his direction

Me: yes baby

Him: I am hungry can you feed me?

I helped him up on the bed and fed him he can be a baby at times. I wanted to switch my phone on and check on my Kenny and find out how he is doing or what he is doing and talk to my baby and ...

Gertrude: hard being away from your little ones

I looked up and smiled at her and nodded

Me: of course as much as my kids are here I miss my little ones the void is there

Her: I don't think I can go a day without my daughter

Me: she is pretty and sweet

Her: thank you

Me: did you talk to Dan?

Her smile faded and looked away, I didn't mean to hurt her but I wanted to hear where she is with her life

Me: don't feel ashamed it is better that he knows now than later

Her: I still feel somehow, I hope he doesn't hate me

Me: of course he will hate you, he loved you but I guess it is part of life to go through pain and tearful moments

She smiled

Her: I hate myself

Me: don't. Life had other plans for you, and Dan being together with you was not part of the plan. What if you married him and he found out that Hannah is not his? How would he have reacted and would he still love you?

She looked away and I finished feeding my big baby he took his plate and walked out skipping up and down. He has been jolly this couple of days and I love it.

Karabo: hello family

She joined me on the bed and looked at us

Me: are you not sleeping?

Her: nope thought I might make a slumber party with my sister in-law and future sister in law

She turned to Gertrude

Karabo: have you met your future mother in-law?

She shook her head, I have also never met her and she is Mpilo's grandmother

Karabo: you are about to come into a very weird family you better have loads of popcorns and tissues

Me: why are you scaring her?

She looked at me

Her: you also should prepare for the insults coming actually I will be there for moral support that woman is poison I tell you she sucks the joy out of everyone

Me: what? How bad?

Her: to the point of being slapped called names and made to want to move out and never return back to that house. Let me put it this way if someone ran over her with a car that someone would be me

Gertrude looked very spooked and scared, while I tried not to laugh at her statement

Her: don't allow her to control you but she is a nice person once you get to know her

We both looked at her and she chuckled

Her: there is nothing nice about her at all I am merely trying to ease your minds

Me: so what now

Her: you just need to be able to handle her but luckily for you guys you have me and I have faced her

Gertrude: I don't think I want to marry anymore

Me: baby when you get married you marry the whole family regardless of the drama you need to be the one to hide the problems

Karabo: marriage is not hard you just need to communicate to your husband

Gertrude: what if...

Me: when you have doubts talk to him, when she gives you a hard time talk to him when he hits you call us and we deal with him

She chuckled

Me: and try by all means to talk to your in-laws

She nodded

Karabo: I have lived with them and they hate me, oh and when you see a creepy man sitting in a wheelchair mumbling to himself don't entertain him that is Mandla's brother Sam and he is not right in the head at all

Gertrude looked at me shocked

Karabo: don't look at her she doesn't know the family and never lived with them you should be looking at me, but don't worry I am here for you I will take care of you and really I can kick ass

We laughed

Busi: it sounds jolly here

Me: we are preparing Getty here for marriage

Busi: ooh the M word and the burdens it comes with

Karabo: she has a weird mother in-law

Busi: eerr.. monster in-law

Karabo: worse

Me: stop scaring her

Busi: it is life sadly baby, but you will be fine I promise

Getty: I think Hannah is awake now

She jumped up and left

Me: you guys are bad

Busi: she will be strong she needs to be prepared

Karabo: and I was not lying with Philisile as her mother in-law she needs to toughen up

She took the phone and ordered cocktails after a few minutes they came in and we drank up

Karabo: I wonder what my husband is doing

Me: I don't care

I lied I couldn't stop thinking about him and daydream about him I need him I want him and I know he misses me

Busi: they should suffer we should stay here for a month

We brought our glasses together but really I wanted to see my Ken

Busi: he is probably struggling with my grandchild

Me: Ken is probably struggling as well

Busi: to freedom

We kept drinking and talking it was really fun the other ladies where probably asleep by now just us being crazy and being fun

Busi: let's go to the pool

We all got dressed in swimwear and moved to the pool area and dipped our feet in the water and Busi jumped in swimming the cold water

Karabo: yes our human fish

Busi: the water is so refreshing join me

I shook my head and before I knew it she pulled us one by one in and we had no choice but to swim as well and after a while got out and dressed up walking to our separate bedrooms, I opened my door and found Ray sleeping and I pushed him gently to the side and joined him. I kissed his forehead and he was sweating, a few seconds later he screamed so loudly and I shook him up gently he didn't open his eyes and continued screaming shaking violently

Me: baby wake up please

He opened his eyes and looked at me his body was trembling

Me: are you okay

He looked confused

Me: did you have a bad dream?

He shook his head and hugged me and I gently tried to put him back to sleep

Me: it is okay I am here okay

He nodded and held me close to him, he was afraid of going to sleep and I left the light on for him while I drifted to sleep

\*KENNY\*

I woke up early in the morning my head was pounding hard and I reached for the headache tablets and I looked around the guys were out only Chace was up and I looked all over the house and found him chilling with the children and feeding Tino

Him: sorry you were sleeping when my son woke me up and found your children awake as well hope you don't mind

I shook my head

Me: it's okay

Him: how is the headache?

Me: why did you do it?

He looked at me

Me: why did you kiss her?

Him: I am sorry I... I felt drawn to her and I guess I took advantage she is sweet and hurt a lot and I really...

He closed his eyes while I listened to his pathetic excuse

Him: truly speaking I am sorry, I am drawn to her she is weird funny and beautiful. She got in a bad situation and managed to pull through and I admire her courage and ability to fight through life. The kiss was never meant to happen but seeing her cry it touched me and I wanted to make her feel better

Me: by making her feel worse

Her: it was a mistake that I promise I will never repeat you are my brother and we should stick together I will do anything to earn you trust again I will never ever touch her again please forgive me we are boys we have been through tough times together you me Arthur Mal and Freddie. We made something of ourselves from nothing to something and I would hate lose it because of my stupidity

I walked to him and helped him up and we shared our secret handshake which we learned from the military in our days together

Me: brothers till we die

He smiled and Mal walked in hugging us which made everything weird

Me: ay this is so gay

Him: I would rather be gay with you guys

We chuckled and I took my son changing his clothes and I gave him a bath while Mal bathed my daughter and Chace bathed his son

Mal: Jay's cancer is in remission

We cheered like crazy waking the guys

Me: this is good news

Mal: I have never been this happy in my entire life

Chace: I knew she was going to be alright she is a fighter that is what I love about her she is exactly like me

Mal: that will mean I will be having sex with you

Me: hmmm

Chace: damnnn

We both walked out and left him there

\*CHAPTER 69\*

\*KENNY\*

I packed the children's bags as well as my clothes and I found the guys sitting nursing their headaches

Mandla: well you are ready to fetch our women?

Me: I mean it I am bring my wife home tonight

Lucky: brother can I ask you something?

Me: go ahead

Him: after getting our women back I want to start with the wedding preparations

Me: so the wedding is happening?

Him: yes

Me: than you have my full permission call that mother of yours and tell her we coming

Him: tomorrow if possible

I nodded my little brother is a man now, speaking of being a his mother I should take my kids to see mine it hurts that she wasn't at my wedding and I blame Kenneth for all of this

Freddie: before you bring your wives back let's all chill

Me: where

Freddie: my club of course

Me: where will we leave our...

I couldn't even finish the statement when Pearl Chace's nanny walked in and greeted us. I swear we were all drooling when we saw she is flames and young damn

Me: how do you cope?

Mal: mother of God, this is the best creation I have seen in life

I looked at Chace

Chace: I don't, the reason why I am always away from home and my wife. It seems like I am running away from her, I just don't know how to tell her without making her feel somehow. She is the cause of my running away from home

Mal: damn that is deep

Chace: it is better than cheating with the nanny

Her: do you want me to make breakfast?

Nobody answered her as she was making food on my kitchen my wife is going to kill me

Kamo: let me help you

He was standing close to her

Her: no thank you

Kamo: nonsense I am here already

He was touching her and making her smile and Freddie stood up as well and decided to "help" her this is going to be a long day

Chace: she is not wearing a bra

Me: I noticed

Arthur: I feel like a pervert

We looked at him as he was talking to his penis. She handed us breakfast and we eat trying by all means to break off eye contact with her. Everyone took turn showering and I took my children and safely put them in my car

Me: guys I will be back

Mal: you trust us with our house?

Me: do something stupid and I will show you what I am capable of



I drove to visit my mother it has been a while and I knew there was no improvement I signed in and went to her room Mpilo looked scared to even be here while Tino was fast asleep

Me: hi mom

She looked at me and smiled

Me: you recognise me?

She broadened her smile and looked away

Me: I brought my little family to you

Her: who are you?

Me: Kenneth Swanepoel

She looked at me smiling and opened her arms I went in and we shared a hug

Her: why didn't you visit me?

Me: I am sorry ma, before I forget this is my daughter Mpilo and my son Valentino

Her: they are so pretty

Me: ma I am married

Her: where is she? Does she hate me? why didn't she come? Is she embarrassed of me? are you embarrassed of me?

Me: no I am not, she couldn't come because she was busy with some things

She looked hurt and looked away

Me: ma

She looked at me confused

Her: who are you?

I closed my eyes and looked up walking to her and kissed her forehead. As much as I wanted to stay here and be with her I knew Mpilo was not liking what she sees and I have to put her first so I had to go home

Me: goodbye mom, I will see you

I wanted to cry and forget about coming here, I will never forgive Kenneth ever for this he is to pay and I will make sure of it. I drove back home and Pearl took the kids with her

We went to the club and sat in the VIP drinking, I never thought there will be a day Kamo and I would sit down and chill, I really needed to unwind and relax I needed Amanda to

distract me I want her now. My little brother was happy seeing us all enjoying ourselves Freddie came with girls and they started dancing for us. I closed my eyes and tried to picture Amanda. The drinks kept flowing and the ladies were dancing like crazy shaking their asses and breasts in front of us.

Chace: I need to go

Mal: where are you going?

Chace: to distress on my wife I don't want to catch an STD in this club

We all stood and left Freddie with his ladies

Kamo: I think I will stay just for two minutes

I shook my head and got in the car I have to go to my wife I won't entertain Kamogelo and his salt problems, I need my Amanda she is my beautiful gem staying here would mean cheating on her. I can't baby a grown ass man. I got in my car and drove out

\*AMANDA\*

I woke up in the morning and bathed Ray and we walked down to breakfast sitting down with Naledi and Mpho just catching up after breakfast we went to look at the animals the ladies joined us and everyone was chatting the day went by fast and I was enjoying hanging out with the ladies at night the children went separately and the ladies and I hit the bar and we ordered ciders just talking and making jokes. The ladies left and Mpho came to me looking worried

Him: mom your son is screaming

I walked with him to their bedroom and I found him sleeping and sweating, I gently woke him up and offered to take with me but he refused and asked me how to handle Ray. I told him to hold him close to him and I kissed both their forehead before leaving. I walked past Busi's room and heard things breaking I was about to open when I heard her moan and I walked away it is not my business, what if she is getting raped I walked back and knocked on her door

Me: Busi are you okay?

Her: yeah

I heard someone giggle with her and walked to my room. I hope she isn't cheating I walked in and my room was very dark I was lazy to switch on the light and threw myself on the bed pulling the blankets on me. I said a short prayer for me and my family and closed my eyes

Kenny: hi

He whispered in my ear and I jumped out of the bed and looked at him with shock on my face

Kenny: miss me? Maybe? No? Yes? I don't know?

I looked around I don't even know what I was expecting. He opened his arms and I jumped into them and he spun me around and we collapsed on the bed looking into each other's eyes

Kenny: you not going to say anything? Might as well walk away

He was about to stand up and I pulled him back

Me: don't leave. I am just shocked you are here, where are my kids

Him: now she remembers us they are home safe and sound

I laughed and he kissed my forehead

Him: I missed you so much

Me: I missed you too

I sniffed him and he reeked of alcohol

Me: did you drink and drive?

He chuckled

Him: is that all you worried about?

I looked at him

Him: I was coming here to punish you with senseless sex making you beg for me to stop

Me: I know you won't last that long

Him: want to bet?

I closed my mouth and looked at him

Him: thought as much. Damn I am so hungry

There was a knock on the door and they brought in pizza

Him: help me eat this

He took a slice and I was about to take mine and he slapped my hand off it and we ate the one he was holding. He kissed me and tickled me

Me: stop

Him: I miss hearing you laugh

I tried to move from him and he pulled me to him and blow my neck with kisses while we laughed

Him: what where you ladies up to?

Me: that is private

He shook his head we continued talking and him telling me about the crazy things Mpilo did some of where were sweet.

Kenny: tomorrow we are going to KZN

Me: why?

Him: Lucky wants to get married soon

I nodded and looked away picturing Lucky happy with Gertrude it hurts that... no stop Amanda. Dammit I have been hiding my feeling for far too long and soon it will catch up

Him: you still love him don't you?

I shook my head, I still cared about him I thought we would end up together but nope. I looked at Kenny and kissed his lips

Me: I am happy here in your arms like this you complete me, you are my forever

We talked until we slept in each other's arms and it felt good being in his arms I didn't want him to wake up and leave me alone I just wanted to be in his arms forever and be safe.

When I opened my eyes in the morning he was looking at me and he came in for a kiss and he pulled me up to him taking off my clothes until I was naked and he rested on top of me

Him: I miss seeing you naked

Me: I was literally gone for a few days

He chuckled and pinned me down looking into my eyes

Me: you smell of alcohol and I of morning breathe

Him: so?

Me: well we could...

I was about to suggest shower when he penetrated me hard and I was cut off by my moaning

Him: say something I dare you

I looked at him and he continued with his gentle strokes and closed my eyes when he stop

Him: open your eyes I want to communicate with you. I want this to be long lasting

We made love looking into each other and it felt good, so good we didn't hear the door open until Mpho walked back out and we laughed.

## CHAPTER 70\*

\*KENNYY\*

The fact that she was still hung on my brother didn't sit well with me, I thought I could sleep it through since I was drunk but I couldn't. My anger and jealousy got the better of me I ended up dreaming seeing them having sex while I watched from a far. I wanted to kill her right there I woke up before her and made it my mission to fuck my brother out of her mind I decided to make take it slow and please her all the way to her soul until Mpho disturbed us and she pushed me off although we laughed about it

Me: where are you going?

Her: to make sure our son is still fine

She got dressed and rushed to the bathroom while I got up and made the bed. I decided to join her in the shower and she dashed out the moment I stepped in. I took the shower and got out brushing my teeth and walked back to the room and wore my clothes ordering room service for breakfast. There was a knock on the door and I tipped the guy while I took the tray from him. I waited for my wife to come and I texted the nanny to use one of the cars and come with my kids here so I can go with them to KZN. After a while Amanda came back and sat next to me

Me: breakfast

Her: yes please

She was wearing her red dress and it was short and hugged her curves well revealing her slim figure and not really firm but firm cleavage damn she looked so beautiful one would swear she doesn't have kids, that she pushed four kids to be precise. While she ate I stood up and packed her bags, she walked to me and hugged me from behind. She slowly lifted

my shirt up running her fingers up and down my abs, I turned and faced her lifting her face and planted a kiss

Her: I missed you so much

Me: I missed you too

Her: we going home first or?

Me: we are going to KZN baby

She looked down

Me: it is no use to hide away from the past we are going there for a wedding and nothing else okay

She nodded and I walked to the kids room

Ray: daddy

He came to me and I picked him up putting on my shoulders

Me: how is my big boy?

Him: I am okay

I put him down it was good to see him smile like this

Me: we need to get you a haircut

Him: mommy said she will do it

Me: mommy?

Him: yes

Me: no mommy cannot give you a haircut you are going to look like a woman

He held his head

Me: we cannot have my son looking like a woman

He agreed with me

Him: mommy promised to get me a Barbie shirt

This is the shit I won't tolerate, I ignored the toto issue but now a barbie this is over doing it

Him: can I get it daddy?

Me: are you a man or woman?

He looked down I know it hurt but he is my little man

Me: you are my man right?

He nodded

Me: good we are going to forget this happened and we are going to get tattoos right

Him: yes daddy can I get one here

He pointed at his shoulder

Me: yes you can. Now we need to pack, where is your brother and sister?

Him: Mpho is showering and Naledi is with Colleen they are holding hands and walking by the pool

Me: okay let's pack your bags

Him: are we going?

I nodded and he jumped up and down grabbing my hand and we rushed to his closet and packed his bags with him telling me what he was up to with Mal's twins including Mbali and Siya, they really had fun drowning in the slides and being saved. I took his hand and he showed me the whole resort the view really was beautiful and breath-taking

A text came through and Pearl walked in with my children and Mpilo ran to us and hugged my feet as I stared at her and Pearl handed me my son she was followed by Freddie

Mpilo: daddy

I kept staring at her I wanted to see her reaction. She raised her hands and lifted them down when I didn't respond to her and she was about to walk away when I picked her up picking up two kids is an exercise on its own

Me: princess

I kissed her cheek and she smiled wrapping her arms around me. We sat by the pool and dipped our feet in, I took off Tino's crawl and he had a purple bruise on his knee I dipped his tiny feet in and he cried. I pulled him out and wiped him clean putting his clothes back on gently putting him on the blanket next to Ray away from the pool.

Gretty: you are going to make him sick

I chuckled and she kneeled down and hugged me from behind

Me: hi kiddo

Her: hi how are you?

Me: could be better, so are you ready

Her: for?

Me: the wedding

She looked at me

Me: didn't Lucky tell you

Her: I thought he was drunk he was actually being serious, oh my I laughed in his face and he was sulking today

Me: I will talk to him just prepare your family

Her: you are my family

Me: of course I am. Where will you be without me?

Her: probably with twenty men in a bar hustling a living

We continued talking making jokes and being playful

Me: no more dan just one man Lucky. Remember when I caught you having sex in my house

She looked embarrassed and pushed me into the pool I swam back up and dragged her in the pool as well. She got out fast and ran to her room while I laughed.

\*AMANDA\*

I packed all our bags in the car and I saw Greta running to her room wet I wonder what happened I walked to the pool and Ken in the pool laughing

Me: what is so funny?

He looked at me and walked out of the pool to hug me

Me: no you are wet

Him: wet for you baby

Me: I packed the bags in your car and we are ready to go

Him: did they fit?

I nodded and he picked up Tino and held Mpilo's hand. Mandla and Lucky walked to us

Mandla: are you ready to go to that house?

He closed his eyes and nodded the both didn't seem excited by the idea of going

Lucky: father is coming



His eyes were still closed and all his muscles tensed up

Mpilo: ouch daddy

She was struggling to get out of his hand and Tino started crying as well, it was a painful cry

Me: KENNY!

We struggled to rescue the kids from his grip and he opened his eyes again and looked at us confused and he looked at the children. He released Mpilo and hushed Tino while Lucky picked up Mpilo and comforted her

Me: ken are you okay?

Does he hate his father this much?

Him: I am ready to face everything

He turned to walk

Him: Lucky you can come with Mpilo and Amanda fetch Mpho and Naledi

Mpho: already here

Naledi came to us skipping with a broad smile towards us

Him: I am going to kill Colleen

I turned to look at him

Me: what?

I was confused and he shook his head and we walked to his car, we got in and he played a track that calms him down. He brought the engine to life and we drove to KZN his speed was above 160 nobody was talking. The last time I tried he increased the speed to 180 so I kept quiet and watched the road.

We stopped in front of my parent's house and we walked in. we greeted each other and mom hugged the children taking Tino from Kenny

Ma: where is my granddaughter?

Kenny: having some alone time with her father and new step-mother

She nodded and sat down

Me: where is dad?

Her: he is somewhere out there

Me: is everything alright?

She shrugged her shoulders and changed the topic, I could see she was uneasy. In the evening my father came in drunk and was shocked to see us. I was shocked to see him in that state

Him: Lumka what do you want? Is it money? I gave you some yesterday

Me: baba it's me Amanda your daughter

Him: me I have no daughter. I am still enjoying my youth

He walked to my mother dancing it was weird and embarrassing

Him: mfazi take me home

Her: we not doing this again this is your home

I looked at Kenny and he had his head in his arms covering his eyes, my father walked to me and looked into my eyes

Him: Amanda when did you get here?

Me: I have been here dad

Him: come give me a hug poppy

I hugged him and after a while he passed out on the sofa.

Me: let's go ken

Him: let's stay here please I think your mother needs us

Her: I am fine you can go I can handle him

Me: let's go

He didn't look at easy

Him: fine just hope Kenneth is not there

Ken drove us to his home and nobody was there, he took the kids to an extra rooms and I stayed in the kitchen he came back and lifted me up and placed me on the table. He didn't say anything he lifted my dress and started kissing me taking off his pants and boxers

Me: you are worried about your father, how much do you hate him?

He looked away and didn't say anything, I turned his face so he could look at me and I brushed his face

Me: allow me in your pain

I wanted to say something and he silenced me with deep strokes, I couldn't control my moans he was not being friendly and he lifted me up and placed me on the sink scratching my back it was very painful, tears escaped. I thought he was done and he lifted me to the bedroom and dropped me on the bed, we didn't talk as much just allowed him to let his emotions out on me. He strangled me and I felt like I was going to die, he was not passionate or romantic it damaged me a little. I could feel pain down there. He applied pressure all over my body and he slapped and punched me a couple of times. After we were done my body was full of bruises and in pain I guess he hates his father that much

#### \*CHAPTER 71\*

It was hard waking up in the morning and I felt pain with every movement and the fact that I couldn't sleep the whole night due to the pain I was feeling was contributing. I kept looking up as tears escaped the whole night and passed out when the sun was rising. I slowly turned my body and caught Ken looking at me with horror written on his face. He quickly wiped his tears when he caught me staring.

I tried to smile but my lips were busted and he came to my side and helped me up helping me with soft porridge. We both didn't talk well I wanted to talk but I couldn't I was in too much pain. After eating he came back with a wet cloth and wiped me, eventually his tears escaped and he stood up walked to the bathroom and kicked the door. He came back to me and kneeled in front of me

Him: how are you feeling baby?

Me: it is sore

My whole body was in pain

Him: please don't ever ask me to take out my anger on you ever again no matter how much you want to be in my pain. I shouldn't have allowed my emotions to get the better of me

Me: it's fine baby

Him: no IT IS NOT. LOOK AT YOU RIGHT NOW YOU CAN HARDLY MOVE. And it is my fault

He said the last part in a softer manner

Him: I took out my anger on you and not him, he is the one who should be like this not you

He pulled me to him and wiped my tears

Him: please forgive me please

Me: there is nothing to forgive

Him: because you love me, but deep down I know you are very much hurt

I closed my eyes and remembered my first marriage

Him: I don't want you to be like this ever again

Me: what are we going to tell the kids?

Him: the truth. I don't want them to hate me, I already hate myself, you deserve good things not this baby I love too much to see you like this

He stood up and walked to the bathroom, I heard the water running and I tried to stand up. I underestimated the damage done to me stumbled on the floor

Him: honey are you okay?

He came back out and looked at me covering his mouth with his hands and he walked to me and crawled to my level

Me: don't cry please it is not that bad

He picked me up and walked me to the mirror. I had black and blue spots and on some part of my body I was swollen and there was dried up blood between my thighs. He walked us to the bathroom and I washed myself the pain I cannot stop stressing how much it hurts because it really hurts. Flash backs of last night came back and this time tears came out. It really was bad

Him: shh don't cry please

Me: join me

I made space for him for him and he sat behind as I rested my head on his chest and he wrapped his hands around me. We both were lost in our own emotions and cried. I just hope this is the last time and that he will never repeat what happened.

He got out before me and went out while I stayed in bath. I struggled to get out of the bathtub and somehow I managed I was about to walk out when Ken came in and help me back to the room and I found Tino resting on the bed

Him: I told the kids you are sick and won't need visitors unless you think otherwise

I nodded and sat on the bed with great difficulty and he helped me apply lotion on some of the parts I couldn't reach. He dressed me in my night gown and we sat on the bed. I rested my head on his shoulder and closed my eyes. When I opened my eyes it was late and Ken was not next to me. I heard arguments outside the door and he walked in with Chace

Ken: I honestly didn't hit her on purpose

Chace: oh my god what has he done to you Amanda, do you seriously want her to be your emotional punching bag?

Ken: I won't touch her ever again

Chace took out something from his medical kit and injected me with it

Chace: take this everyday it will help with the pain and tomorrow the swelling will be nothing but a bad bruise and maybe someone here will feel your pain

He got up and I looked as Chace walking out

Chace: I won't tell anyone not even Mal

Ken closed his eyes

Chace: learn to control your anger

After he left Tino cried and he walked to him and picked him up and they came to join me on the bed, I moved closer to him and brushed his arm. The arm that hit me, stop Amanda

Me: it was a mistake don't blame yourself, I know you

He looked over to me and pulled my head close to his mouth and kissed the top of my head. After Three days I was back to myself and was left with just a few bruises nothing make-up can't fix. Kenny asked for the things to be postponed until I was fine and told them that I was suffering from a contagious illness that needed him to be close to me. I walked out for the first time since I got here and walked to the kitchen everyone was there

Karabo: look at you Mrs. Can you believe Ken held the meeting until you were healthy? What was wrong with you?

I was about to answer when my daughter ran to me and I picked her up kissing her all over, Lucky followed after her and looked at me with a worried face. He pulled me to follow him outside

Him: what happened?

Me: nothing major

Him: did he hurt you?

Me: no I was sick

He held my hand noticing a few bruises and I yanked it off walking back inside looking for Kenny and found him feeding our son with a very pretty young woman. I poke him from behind and he looked at me standing up to perk my lips

Him: hi baby this is Pearl, she is Chace's nanny and since they forced to come here she will help take care of the children

I nodded and greeted her

Kenny: let's go out a bit before the meeting later on

Me: where are we going?

Him: shopping don't you want to come with

Me: okay

He finished feeding Tino his bottle

Me: we should start feeding him real food

Him: after 6months baby look at him he is still small

I rolled my eyes and he handed me Tino and I burped him while he fetched Mpilo who came with Mpho and Ray

Me: we are going shopping

Him: with you? No thank you

Me: tell Naledi

Him: she left with Colleen to the beach

Me: okay

Kenny came to us and we walked out with pearl. I really needed this bonding time with him although he was complaining as I was battling to choose outfits, we had four trolleys

filled with clothes for the kids and we walked to CTM after offloading the trolleys in the car.

Him: we should change the titles at home

Me: I like the house just the way it is

Him: we should actually get a new house with new memories and not the ones with Ntombizodwa's shadow I have a feeling soon she will haunt us in that house

I didn't mean to but I ended up giggling

Him: we can't have that all

Me: not at all

He took Mpilo and walked with her while I was left with Ray, Pearl was holding Ray in her arms playing with him. I picked out a few blinds for the kitchen and living area when Ken walked past me in a hurry

Me: where is Mpilo?

Him: you will find me in the car

He gave me his cards and rushed out Pearl and I looked at each other and started searching for Mpilo, I was hit by a smell in the toilet aisle and found her sitting on the toilet.

Her: MAMA!

She screamed when she saw me and I didn't know where to hide, her diaper was on the floor. I am going to kill Kenny

Me: baby who made you sit here?

Her: daddy

She was giggling as she said this

Shop assistant: excuse me ma'am is she your daughter

Me: no she is not, I just found her and we are looking for her father. He left the poor kid on the toilet

Her: ma'am please find him and tell him to come and clean up after her

I nodded and helped her down and took a tissue to wipe her clean

Me: I am sorry on their behalf

Pearl: did you find her?

The shop assistant looked at me and I picked Mpilo up as we rushed out of the shop leaving the blinds behind. I got in to the car and strapped Mpilo in and Ray was laughing as he got in. Pearl strapped Tino in and we quickly drove out as the shop assistant was following us. Kenny couldn't stop laughing and I was hitting him with my fists

Him: I am sorry

I shook my head and we drove home. When we walked in we found his father waiting for us

Him: son we were waiting for you

His mood changed quickly

Kenny: let's just get this over and done with

Me: pearl will you be fine with the kids

She nodded and walked out with them, everyone was sitting in the dining room and Kenny walked to the bedroom first and came back to sit next to me

Kenneth Snr: welcome to everyone and thank you for coming well today Lucky is ready to be a man so we made this meeting we will discussing the price we are willing to pay for his bride

A woman mumbled

Philisile: I don't know why we discussing this because my child is still too small to be a married man. I don't even know why we should marry a girl we don't know I have never met her

Lucky: ma

Her: ai suka man, I want to meet her. What if she is a second rate whore? I mean this one here has a child with you and married your brother because he is richer than you

Lucky: I am willing to pay R50 000 for her

Kenneth: wow son that is impressive

Her: R50 000 for a woman I have never met, never don't you dare. Lucky think about this

Kenny was closing his eyes and squeezing my hand. My heart was beating fast what if he take out this frustration out on me tonight. I poked him and he looked at me. He could see the fear in my eyes and he brushed my head before standing up

Kenny: if you ever talk about my wife and put negative words with her I will rip you limp by limp and I will make sure that I burn the remainder of your body and we will have nothing left to bury do you hear me. good now on the pressing issue Lucky we will start at



R50 000 and go up if needs be and since I raised her I actually prefer R100 000 because she is a good kid and a mother of your daughter not forgetting you abandoned her

Lucky: I accept

Her: you are not his father

Kenny: neither is your husband

Kenneth snr: son!

He walked over to his father and took out his gun and pointed it at him before pulling his head back and sticking the gun in his mouth

Kenny: don't you fucken say anything at all do you hear me? Don't! You left a good woman for this one here, do you know she slept with me when you were not here and she has the audacity to call my wife a whore. You broke Laila when you took everything from her, my mother is in the looney because of you. You should have left me in her care but no you decided you were clever. You should visit her and see the damage you have done to her. You destroyed her!

I could feel the hurt with every word he said

Chace: please he is not worth it

Kenny: today I won't spare you

Me: Kenny please

He looked at me and looked at his father I heard the sound of the gun being cocked and I closed my eyes, I opened them when my daughter was calling his name. Mpilo held his leg and he looked at her and he dropped his gun kneeling to her leave. He picked her up and she rested her head on his shoulder

Kenny: meeting is over

He called me to him and my whole body was still shaking from the events that happened just now

for the past couple of days i had my joy snatched away but all shall be well through Christ. the heavens have gained a sweet angel it would have been nice to know you though but everything happens for a reason

\*CHAPTER 72 the finale\*

When we got outside he asked me to take Mpilo from him. I was still shaken from the events that just unfolded and I really didn't know what to expect from him

Him: wait here I will be back

He walked back inside and I wanted to follow him, what if he finishes what he has started and kills his father? What if Mpilo was not there would we be crying right now watching the man I love murder his own father? No I should go back if he doesn't come back in the next 5 seconds I am going back to fetch him.

As if he was reading my mind he came back carrying Tino and Ray was walking behind him

Him: why are you not inside the car?

Me: I was about to fetch you

He chuckled as if I made a joke

Me: where are you taking us?

Him: you will see, it is just too sad that Mpho and Naledi won't be able to join us

I nodded and got in, he didn't even bother strapping Mpilo in, she was roaming around freely

Me: is it safe for her to be sitting like this?

Him: relax, she is fine she has my blood after all

I rolled my eyes and he drove off, the drive was five minutes of silent. Only Mpilo was singing a weird song only she could understand and Tino was blabbering to himself.

Him: we are here

Me: where is here exactly?

He smiled and walked to my side opening the door for me and raising his hand so I could climb off

Me: what is happening?

He walked to the kids side and helped them out giving Tino to me and holding Mpilo and ray we walked towards the beach and he kept looking at me

Me: what?

Him: I just don't want to miss your reaction

Me: for what exactly?

We walked a bit and I saw a picnic laid basket and blanket with candles and balloons. Not forgetting wine

Him: I have been a shit husband, I turned into a monster and I have made you feel bad and think otherwise about me. I love you and you have stayed in my bad baby many would have walked away. You don't deserve what I did to you and still you saw the good in me and forgive me. This is for us as family to spend time together. I love you Amy

He walked closer to me and perked my lips before Mpilo pushed me away from him and he couldn't stop laughing

Her: my dad!

Me: of course baby

We sat on the blanket and Ray wondered off the beach

Him: I just don't think I can ever forgive that man, I know you asked me on our wedding day but I just can't

Me: look at what that anger made you do today, you nearly shot him in front everyone

Him: I guess every family has its own drama

Me: and I inherited the worst really I think

He chuckled

Him: you will get used to it

We spend the remainder of the day sitting at the beach enjoying our time together, Tino started complaining and Ken took him in his arms

Him: you know for a few months old baby you complain a lot

He kept moving his body in frustration

Him: you must be tired huh

He stood up and walked up and down with him

Mpilo: mama water

She ran to the water and ran back to me and I held her closer to me, she ran back and I stood up to join her. We came back and she slept in my arms. Ken took them to the car and opened the windows while they peacefully slept. Even Ray joined them

Me: it is getting late we should head back to the house

He shook his head and scoped me up walking to the water, when he let me go he was already in the water and the waves hit us. I tried to run out and he pulled me back in and the third wave was too strong we both fell and laughed at our insanity. He carried me to the blanket and we laid next to each other facing up

Him: do you love me?

I looked at him

Me: yes I love you

Him: I can't hear you

Me: I said I love you

Him: I am sure you were whispering that part

He moved closer to me

Me: I LOVE YOU KENNY!

He pulled me closer and kissed me all over

Him: let's go home before we make a beach baby

I climbed on top of him

Him: I guess beach baby it is

He slowly undressed me while kissing me and looking into my eyes. Within minutes we were both naked and he rolled until he was on top of me

Him: my Amy

He slowly penetrated me and it felt so good. For once alone time just us while the kids are sleeping. We both were sweating and exhausted we only stopped when we both farted and ended up laughing

Me: it stinks

We got up and got dressed. I won't lie and say I didn't enjoy this moment with my husband.

The following days the wedding took place and everyone enjoyed themselves. If you had asked me a few years ago how my life would turn out I wouldn't have said it would be like

this but here I am today, from a bad marriage to a happy one. My faith in God has steered my life in the right direction and Kenny has been my blessing and I really appreciate everything he has done for me. He has been my pillar of strength and really blessed my life.

A few years later my Mpho and Naledi had grown to be these beautiful adults, I had big dreams for Mpho but like a bad dream crime life attracted him when he started working for Kenny's father causing the fight between them to be heated. Sadly my baby was shot dead when they were stealing a car and Naledi got her degree and had a son she named him after Mpho which for me was the sweetest thing considering he never had a child just a girlfriend who was heartbroken. Ray got his degree and lives in the states while Mpilo and Tino are still in school.

My father, we discovered he was suffering from Alzheimer's disease and lost his mind until the age of 82 and sadly he also passed on my mother never recovered and followed after. Kenny was with me throughout, Mal also helped out, his wife also relapsed and passed on a few weeks back he took it pretty bad and his friends or should I say family has been there for him and Chace. As for me, I am back at doing what I love, working and I have been a lecturer. I have learned to focus on the positives and forget the negatives in order to deal with life. Yes life has thrown me into the wolves, but I turned out to be the alpha. Had I given up I would have never achieve what I have and I would have been stuck in a loveless sad reality.

I am a woman, a mother, a daughter, a grandmother, a sister and a wife and I do know my worth. It is defined by my scars, my pain, my joy, my happiness, my faith, and my family. I am who I am because of the lessons in life thank you for following my story